

Sirius 21  
シリウス

英語 Vol.3

発展編





### 本書の特色

本書は、中学生としての最高レベルの英語力を効率的に養成し、修得するために開発された教材です。したがって、知識のまとめ、演習問題のどちらもハイレベルの内容になっています。また、難関私立高校入試対策としても使えるよう、中学指導要領外の内容も扱っています。

### 本書の構成

本書は、全体を大きく次の2つのパートに分けて構成してあります。

### 通常の文法単元

単元1から単元24は文法を学習する単元です。単元19から単元24は中学指導要領外の内容になっています。各単元は、文法説明→練成問題→発展問題の順に学習します。



#### ■ 文法説明

わかりやすい例文と説明により、文法の規則や構文の知識を得ることができます。



#### ■ 練成問題

文法説明で整理した知識を確認したり、運用できるようになるための演習問題です。間違えた問題は文法説明に戻って、できるまでやり直しましょう。



#### ■ 発展問題

習得した知識を応用したり、さらに高度な運用ができるようになるための演習問題です。なかには難しい問題もありますが、あきらめずに挑戦しましょう。

#### ● 連語

単元によっては、最後に、その単元の文法事項を含む連語をまとめてあります。

### 入試対策

難関私立高校、および国立高校の入試対策です。

#### ■ 出題形式別、文法・作文・語彙問題演習

応用力、実戦力をつけるために、出題形式別にまとめた、文法・作文・語彙問題です。〈同義文完成〉、〈整序作文〉、〈誤文判別・誤文訂正〉、〈部分英作文〉、〈和文英訳〉、〈語彙〉、〈発音・アクセント〉の問題で構成してあります。〈同義文完成〉や〈整序作文〉などは、練成問題と発展問題の2段階に問題をレベル分けしてあります。

#### ■ 読解総合問題

頻出の題材を用いた読解問題です。〈ユーモア〉、〈社会・言語〉、〈歴史・文化〉、〈科学〉、〈物語〉のジャンルに分けてあります。〈物語〉には近年の傾向に合わせて1000語レベルの長文を2題加えました。

\*実際の入試で出題された問題には出典校を掲載していますが、単元1から単元24では、編集上の整理や改題を行っているため、出典を省略したものも多々あります。

✂ **必答問題** これだけは必ず取り組んでもらいたいという問題に、必答マークを付けました。

🚩 **応用問題** 難易度の高い問題に、高難度マークを付けました。さらに学習を深めるために、ここで力試しをしてください。

# 英語 Vol.3

## 1 助動詞…………… 4～11

- ◇ 基本的な助動詞の種類と意味
- ◇ 助動詞の働きをする語句
- ◇ その他の助動詞
- ◇ 助動詞を含む慣用表現
- 助動詞, 助動詞の働きをする語句を含む連語

## 2 比較…………… 12～19

- ◇ 比較の基本形
- ◇ 比較の重要構文
- 比較を含む連語

## 3 現在完了…………… 20～29

- ◇ 現在完了の基本的用法
- ◇ 現在完了の注意すべき用法

## 4 不定詞…………… 30～35

- ◇ to 不定詞の基本3用法
- ◇ 名詞的用法
- ◇ 形容詞的用法
- ◇ 副詞的用法

## 5 不定詞を含む構文…………… 36～43

- ◇ 不定詞を含む構文①
- ◇ 不定詞を含む構文②
- ◇ 不定詞を含む表現
- 不定詞を含む連語

## 6 動名詞…………… 44～51

- ◇ 動名詞の形と用法
- ◇ 動名詞を含む慣用表現
- ◇ 動名詞と不定詞
- 動名詞を含む連語

## 7 接続詞…………… 52～59

- ◇ 従位[属]接続詞
- ◇ 等位接続詞
- 接続詞を含む連語

## 8 文型…………… 60～65

- ◇ 文の主要素
- ◇ 5つの文型

## 9 受動態…………… 66～75

- ◇ 受動態の形
- ◇ 第4文型・第5文型の受動態
- ◇ 受動態の疑問文・否定文
- ◇ 注意すべき受動態
- 受動態を含む連語

## 10 分詞…………… 76～81

- ◇ 分詞の形と用法
- ◇ 分詞と形容詞
- ◇ 名詞を修飾する用法
- ◇ 補語になる用法
- ◇ 分詞を使った慣用表現

## 11 関係代名詞(主格・目的格)…………… 82～89

- ◇ 名詞を修飾する語・句・節
- ◇ 主格の関係代名詞
- ◇ 目的格の関係代名詞
- ◇ 関係代名詞節の位置

## 12 関係代名詞(接触節・所有格)…………… 90～95

- ◇ 接触節
- ◇ 所有格の関係代名詞
- ◇ 注意すべき関係代名詞の用法

## 13 間接疑問文…………… 96～101

- ◇ 間接疑問文の働きと形
- ◇ 間接疑問文の文中での位置
- ◇ 間接疑問文を使う注意すべき表現

## 14 付加疑問文・否定疑問文…………… 102～107

- ◇ 付加疑問文の意味と形
- ◇ 注意すべき付加疑問文
- ◇ 否定疑問文の意味と形
- ◇ 付加疑問文・否定疑問文に対する答え方
- ◇ 注意すべき否定疑問文

# 目次

## 15 名詞・冠詞…………… 108～113

- ◆ 名詞の分類
- ◆ 派生語
- ◆ 可算名詞・不可算名詞
- ◆ 名詞の複数形
- ◆ 物質名詞の分量の表し方
- ◆ 冠詞の注意すべき用法

## 16 代名詞…………… 114～119

- ◆ 代名詞の種類
- ◆ 人称代名詞の注意すべき用法
- ◆ 指示代名詞の注意すべき用法
- ◆ 不定代名詞の注意すべき用法・種類

## 17 形容詞・副詞…………… 120～127

- ◆ 形容詞の種類と用法
- ◆ 副詞の種類と用法
- ◆ 注意すべき副詞の用法
- 形容詞・副詞を含む連語

## 18 前置詞…………… 128～135

- ◆ 前置詞の用法
- ◆ 前置詞の働きをする句
- ◆ 他の語と結びついた前置詞
- ◆ その他の前置詞
- 前置詞を含む連語

## 19 現在完了進行形・過去完了…………… 136～141

- ◆ 現在完了と現在完了進行形
- ◆ 現在完了と過去完了

## 20 知覚動詞・使役動詞…………… 142～147

- ◆ 知覚動詞
- ◆ 使役動詞
- ◆ 原形不定詞を用いる文の受動態

## 21 関係代名詞(what)・関係副詞…………… 148～153

- ◆ 関係代名詞の制限用法と非制限用法
- ◆ 関係代名詞 what
- ◆ 関係副詞

## 22 分詞構文…………… 154～159

- ◆ 分詞構文の働き
- ◆ 分詞構文の意味
- ◆ 分詞構文の作り方①
- ◆ 分詞構文の作り方②

## 23 語法の転換…………… 160～165

- ◆ 直接話法と間接話法
- ◆ 語法の転換

## 24 仮定法…………… 166～171

- ◆ 仮定法過去・仮定法過去完了・その他の仮定法 (*should* [*were to*]～)
- ◆ 仮定法を含む表現

## 入試対策

- ① 同義文完成…………… 172～179
- ② 整序作文…………… 180～187
- ③ 誤文判別・誤文訂正…………… 188～193
- ④ 部分英作文…………… 194～197
- ⑤ 和文英訳…………… 198～203
- ⑥ 語彙…………… 204～209
  - 語彙に関するリスト
- ⑦ 発音・アクセント…………… 210～213
- ⑧ 読解総合問題…………… 214～261

## 付録 不規則動詞活用表…………… 262～263

# 1 助動詞

## 基本的な助動詞の種類と意味

**注意** 助動詞……動詞とともに用いられ、その動詞にいろいろな意味を添えたり、時制を表したりする語。助動詞のあとには動詞の原形をおく。

### 1 can (過去形 could)

- a** 「～することができる」《能力・可能》, 「～してもよい」《許可》
- ① I **can** drive a car. 《能力》
  - ② We **cannot** swim because it is cold. 《可能》
  - ③ You **can** go swimming after you finish your homework. 《許可》
- b** 「(肯定文で)～することがありうる, (否定文で)～のはずがない」《可能性・推量》
- It **cannot** be true.

### 2 may (過去形 might)

- a** 「～してもよい」《許可》
- May I use your phone?
- b** 「～かもしれない」《可能性・推量》
- It **may** be true.

### 3 must \*過去は have to の過去形の had to で代用する

- a** 「～しなければならない」《義務・命令》, 「(否定文で)～してはいけない」《禁止・否定命令》
- ① You **must** tell the truth. (= Tell the truth.) \* truth 「真実」
  - ② You **must not**[**mustn't**] read such books. (= Don't read such books.)
- b** 「～にちがいない」《当然の推定》
- It **must** be true.

### 4 should

- a** 「～すべきである」《義務》
- We **should** be kind to old people.
- b** 「(当然)～のはずである」《当然の推定》
- He told me about the plan yesterday, so he **should** remember the plan.

### 5 will (過去形 would)

- a** 「～だろう, ～でしょう」《単純未来》, 「～しよう, ～するつもりだ」《意志未来》
- ① It **will** rain tomorrow. 《単純未来》
  - ② I **will** study English tonight. 《意志未来》
- b** 「(Will you ~? の形で)～してくれませんか, ～しますか。」《依頼・勧誘》
- ① **Will you** help me? — All right. 《依頼》
  - ② **Will you** have some tea? — No, thank you. 《勧誘》

**6 shall** \*「(Shall I ~? / Shall we ~? の形で) ~しましょうか。」相手の意向をたずねる表現

- ① Shall I carry your bag? — Yes, please.
- ② Shall we play tennis after school? — Yes, let's.

### 助動詞の働きをする語句

- a be able to** ~ 「~することができる」 (= can)  
He **was able to** swim across the river.
- b have[has] to** ~ 「~しなければならない」 (= must)  
I **have to** finish my homework before dinner.
- c don't[doesn't] have to** ~ 「~する必要はない」  
We **don't have to** go to school today.
- d had better** ~ 「~したほうがよい」(否定形は had better not ~)  
You look tired. You **had better** go home early and have a rest.

### その他の助動詞

- a need** ~ 「(否定, 疑問文で用いて) ~する必要がある」  
① **Need I** do the work? (= Do I need[have] to do the work?)  
② You **need not** do the work. (= You don't need[have] to do the work.)
- b would** ~ 「(よく) ~したものだ」《過去の習慣》  
I **would** (often) go fishing when I was a child.
- c used to** ~ 「よく ~したものだ」《過去の習慣》, 「以前は ~だった」《過去の状態》  
① I **used to** go swimming in the river. 《過去の習慣》  
② I **used to** like coffee. 《過去の状態》
- d ought to** ~ 「~すべきである」 (= should)  
We **ought to** help each other.

### 助動詞を含む慣用表現

- a cannot ~ too** … 「いくら…しても ~し過ぎることはない」  
We **cannot** thank you too much.
- b cannot help ~ing = cannot help but** ~ 「~せずにはいられない」  
I **could not help** crying. (= I **could not help but** cry.)
- c would like to** ~ 「~したい」(want to ~よりも控え目な表現)  
I **would like to** have some coffee.
- d may well** ~ 「~するのはもっともだ[当然だ]」  
You **may well** be angry with him.
- e You cannot help it.** (=It cannot be helped.) 「仕方がない。」「どうしようもない。」

## 練成問題

**1** 次の( )に入る最も適当な語(句)をそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

- \*  (1) Bill can ( ) very fast.  
 ア runs イ run ウ ran エ running [ ]
- (2) ( ) we use this room? — No, you may not.  
 ア Will イ Must ウ May [ ]
- \*  (3) May I use your bike? — No, you ( ) not.  
 ア need イ must ウ have [ ]
- (4) ( ) you have some tea? — Oh, thank you.  
 ア Did イ Shall ウ Will [ ]
- (5) ( ) you help us? — Sure.  
 ア Shall イ Must ウ Will エ May [ ]
- \*  (6) ( ) wash your car, Father? — Yes, please.  
 ア Shall I イ Can you ウ Will you エ Do I [ ]
- (7) Shall we go on a picnic next Sunday? — Yes, ( ).  
 ア you shall イ you will ウ let's エ we shall [ ]
- \*  (8) You ( ) feel tired after the long walk.  
 ア can イ must ウ had better [ ]
- \*  (9) Tom will ( ) study harder.  
 ア must イ has to ウ have to [ ]
- \*  (10) My father ( ) come home early yesterday.  
 ア has to イ doesn't have to ウ had to [ ]
- \*  (11) Must I wait in this room? — No, you ( ) not.  
 ア may イ must ウ will エ need [ ]
- (12) Tom has to wash his brother's car on Sundays, ( ) he? (明治学院)  
 ア mustn't イ hasn't ウ isn't エ won't オ doesn't [ ]
- \*  (13) You had better ( ) with us.  
 ア stay イ to stay ウ stayed エ staying [ ]
- \*  (14) You ought ( ) home before seven.  
 ア leave イ leaving ウ to leave エ left [ ]
- \*  (15) He ( ) to go fishing in the river.  
 ア might イ used ウ would エ could [ ]
- \*  (16) You cannot be ( ) careful when you drive a car.  
 ア much イ very ウ too [ ]
- (17) I could not help ( ) at him.  
 ア laugh イ laughed ウ laughing [ ]

2 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- \*  (1)(a) Let's go to the park.  
    (b) ..... go to the park?
- (2)(a) Shall we go to the museum after school? 〈桐朋〉  
    (b) ..... go to the museum after school.
- (3)(a) How about some coffee? 〈愛光〉  
    (b) ..... make some coffee ..... you?
- (4)(a) Don't play soccer in this park. 〈東大谷〉  
    (b) You ..... play soccer in this park.
- \*  (5)(a) Don't be late for school. 〈立命館〉  
    (b) You ..... be late for school.
- (6)(a) You must not run in the classroom. 〈駒込〉  
    (b) ..... in the classroom.
- (7)(a) Please pass me the salt. 〈大阪工大附属〉  
    (b) ..... pass me the salt?
- \*  (8)(a) How can I get to Hirano Station? 〈大阪教育大学附属平野〉  
    (b) ..... you tell me ..... to Hirano Station?
- \*  (9)(a) Will you give me a cup of coffee? 〈滝〉  
    (b) ..... I ..... a cup of coffee?
- (10)(a) May I see it? 〈土佐塾〉  
    (b) Will you ..... it ..... me?
- \*  (11)(a) He must study harder.  
    (b) He ..... to study harder.
- (12)(a) Must I go there by car?  
    (b) ..... I ..... to go there by car?
- \*  (13)(a) You need not return the book. 〈国立高専〉  
    (b) You ..... to return the book.
- (14)(a) You don't have to go there. 〈東海〉  
    (b) You ..... not go there.
- \*  (15)(a) We can use the sun's energy.  
    (b) We ..... use the sun's energy.
- (16)(a) Tom could not go to school yesterday.  
    (b) Tom was ..... to go to school yesterday.
- \*  (17)(a) I advise you not to believe the lady. 〈清風南海〉  
    (b) You had ..... believe the lady.
- \*  (18)(a) I cannot but think about the future.  
    (b) I cannot help ..... about the future.

語句

(7) pass [食卓で] ...を手渡す (15) energy エネルギー (17) advise ...に忠告する

# 発展問題

1 次の日本文に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- \*  (1) 彼は毎日、そこへ行かなければならないでしょう。  
He ..... go there every day.
- (2) あなたはその仕事を1人でするにはおよびません。  
You ..... do the work alone.
- (3) 君はなぜきのう、早く帰らなくてはいけなかったのですか。  
Why ..... you ..... go home early yesterday?
- \*  (4) 土曜日のパーティーの参加者は多いと思いますか。 〈広島大学附属〉  
Do you think that ..... be a lot of people at the party on Saturday?
- \*  (5) わたしはあなたのお父さんにお会いしたいものです。  
I ..... like ..... see your father.
- (6) 食事中に音を立ててはいけません。  
You ..... make a noise at table.
- \*  (7) ここで泳いではいけません。荒波にもまれて溺れるかもしれません。  
You ..... swim here. You ..... drowned in a rough sea.
- (8) 彼女は幸せにちがいません。  
She ..... happy.
- \*  (9) わたしの母はそれは本当のはずがないと言いました。  
My mother said to me, "It ..... true."
- \*  (10) 当時、彼はよくわたしに手紙を書いたものです。 〈桐光学園〉  
In those days, he ..... write to me.
- (11) そうたびたび彼の家を訪問しないほうがいい。  
You ..... at his house so often.
- (12) 健康にはいくら気をつけても十分ではありません。  
We cannot be ..... careful of our health.
- \*  (13) わたしは彼に腹を立てずにはいられませんでした。  
I could not ..... angry with him.
- (14) 君がそのニュースを聞いて驚くのは当然です。  
You ..... well be surprised at the news.
- \*  (15) 君が家庭の事情を秘密にしておくのはもっともです。 〈灘〉  
You ..... keep your family affairs to yourself.
- \*  (16) どうしようもありません。  
You ..... it.

語句

(6) make a noise 音を立てる (7) rough 荒い

(15) keep ... to oneself ...を秘密にしておく affair 事情, 問題

2 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、( )内の語句を並べかえなさい。

- (1) あなたはなぜそんなに早く学校へ出かけなければならないのですか。 (国立高専)  
Why ( do / leave / to / have / you / for ) school so early?

- (2) インターネットに接続されたコンピュータがあれば、図書館に行っているいろいろなものを探す必要はありません。 (桐蔭学園)  
If you have a computer with the Internet, ( a library / don't / go to / have / you / to / to find / many different ) things.

- (3) あした早起ししなければならないでしょう。 [1語不要] (駒込)  
We ( to / will / early / have / up / must / tomorrow / get ).

- (4) 彼女は顔色が悪いので、病気にちがいない。 (東明館)  
( because / she / sick / must / looks / she / be / pale ).

- (5) できるだけ急いでそこへ行ったほうがよい。  
( can / as / better / you / quickly / there / go / as / you / had ).

- \*  (6) 君は夜遅く散歩をしないほうがよい。 (土佐)  
( had / take / a / walk / late / you / better / not / night / at ).

- \*  (7) だれもその問いには答えられないでしょう。 (郁文館)  
( no / that / to / be / question / will / answer / one / able ).

- (8) ぼくはすしの作り方を知りたい。 (駿台甲府)  
( how / like / sushi / I / make / would / to / know / to ).

- \*  (9) 失礼ですが、どちら様でしょうか。  
( me / may / name / please / excuse / but / your / have / I )?

- (10) 道路を横断するときには、いくら注意しても過ぎることはありません。 [1語不足]  
( crossing / cannot / careful / a / you / be / street / in ).

- (11) わたしたちは若いころには、よくそのようなことをしたものでした。  
( like / do / we / often / that / would / things ) when we were young.

語句

(4) 顔色が悪い pale

3 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) a Do you want me to open the window? (開成)  
 b ..... I open the window?
- (2) a It is difficult for him to play the guitar.  
 b ..... play the guitar easily.
- (3) a It is not necessary for you to study English. (桐朋)  
 b ..... study English.
- (4) a It is better for you not to drive a car so fast.  
 b You ..... drive a car so fast.
- (5) a It will be impossible for you to finish the work in a day. (東明館)  
 b You ..... be ..... to finish the work in a day.
- (6) a It is impossible that the rumor is true. (開成)  
 b The rumor ..... true.
- (7) a He lived here before. He doesn't live here any more. (お茶の水女子大学附属)  
 b He ..... to live here.

語句

(5) impossible 不可能な (6) rumor うわさ

4 次の日本語を英語に直しなさい。

- (1) 毎日英語を話すようにすれば、数年で上手に話せるようになるでしょう。 (桐朋)  
 .....
- (2) あしたは、君といっしょに買い物に行けないでしょう。 (明治大学付属明治)  
 .....
- (3) あなたは空腹であるかもしれませんが、できるだけゆっくり食べるほうがよいですよ。  
 .....
- (4) 彼女のお母さんはアメリカ人にちがいない。 [6語で] (京華)  
 .....
- (5) あなたは電車の中で携帯電話を使うべきではありません。  
 .....
- (6) あした、雨ならそこに行かなくてもいいですよ。  
 .....
- \*  (7) 君は他人にいくら親切にしてもし過ぎることはありません。  
 .....
- \*  (8) あなたが息子さんを誇りに思うのは当然です。  
 .....
- (9) 父はわたしに最善を尽くしなさいと言ったものでした。 (ラ・サール)  
 .....

語句

(1) 数年で in a few years (5) 携帯電話 cell phone (7) 他人 others  
 (9) 最善を尽くす try[do] one's best

## 助動詞，助動詞の働きをする語句を含む連語

- ① **be able to** ~  
I was able to swim across the river.
- ② **be about to** ~  
The game is about to start.
- ③ **be going to** ~  
I'm going to visit my uncle tomorrow.
- ④ **can but** ~  
I can but try my best.
- ⑤ **can afford to** ~  
I cannot afford to buy a car.
- ⑥ **cannot help** ~ing = **cannot but** ~  
We could not help laughing at him.
- ⑦ **cannot** ~ too ...  
We cannot be too careful of our health.
- ⑧ **had better** ~  
You had better go home early.
- ⑨ **have only to** ~  
You have only to go there.
- ⑩ **have[has] to** ~  
I have to stay home today.
- ⑪ **may well** ~  
He may well say so.
- ⑫ **ought to** ~  
You ought to be careful of your health.
- ⑬ **used to** ~  
(1) I used to go camping every Sunday.  
(2) There used to be a bookstore there.
- ⑭ **would like to** ~  
I'd like to stay here longer.
- ⑮ **would like - to** ~  
I'd like you to stay here longer.
- ⑯ **Would you mind** ~ing?  
Would you mind shutting the door?
- ⑰ **would rather** ~ (than ...)  
I'd rather stay home than go out.
- ① ~ができる  
わたしはその川を泳いで渡ることができました。
- ② (今まさに)~しようとしている  
試合はまさに始まろうとしています。
- ③ ~するつもりだ，~でしょう  
わたしはあした，おじを訪問するつもりです。
- ④ ただ~するだけ，とにかく~だけはする  
とにかく全力は尽くします。
- ⑤ ~する余裕がある《おもに否定文，疑問文で》  
わたしにはとても車を買う余裕はありません。
- ⑥ ~せずにはいられない  
わたしたちは彼を笑わずにはいられませんでした。
- ⑦ いくら...しても~し過ぎることはない  
健康にはいくら注意してもし過ぎることはありません。
- ⑧ ~したほうがよい  
早く家に帰ったほうがよい。
- ⑨ ~しさえすればよい  
君はそこに行くだけでよい。
- ⑩ ~しなければならぬ  
わたしはきょう，家にいなければなりません。
- ⑪ ~するのはもっともだ，~するのは当然だ  
彼がそう言うのはもっともです。
- ⑫ ~すべきだ(must > ought to > should)  
君は健康に気をつけるべきです。
- ⑬ (1) (よく)~したものだ，(2) 以前は~だった  
(1) 日曜日ごとにキャンプへ行ったものです。  
(2) 昔そこには本屋がありました。
- ⑭ (できれば)~したい  
ここにもっと長くいたいものです。
- ⑮ - に~してもらいたい  
あなたにもっとここにいてもらいたいものです。
- ⑯ ~していただけますか。《依頼》  
ドアを閉めていただけますか。
- ⑰ (...するより)むしろ~したい  
わたしは外出するよりむしろ家にいたいです。

# 2 比較

## 比較の基本形

…… 形容詞や副詞の原級・比較級・最上級を用いる。

**注意** 原級・比較級・最上級…… 形容詞と副詞にある3つの形で、それぞれの形はその表す性質・数量・様態などが他と比べてどうであるかを述べる場合に用いられる。

### 1 原級を用いる比較表現

- a** 《as + 原級 + as …》  
He is **as** tall as my father.
- b** 《not as[so] + 原級 + as …》「…ほど～ない」  
He is **not as** tall as my father.

### 2 比較級を用いる比較表現

- a** 《比較級 + than …》
  - ① I am **taller than** my father.
  - ② This book is **more** interesting **than** that one.
  - ③ She **likes** coffee **better than** tea. (= She prefers coffee to tea.)
  - ④ I can run much **faster than** Mike.
- 注意** 比較級を強める場合は much などを用いる(④)。
- b** 《Which[Who] …比較級, A or B?》「A と B とではどちらのほうがより…か。」
  - ① **Which** is **larger**, Australia or Canada?
  - ② **Who** can swim **faster**, you **or** your brother?

### 3 最上級を用いる比較表現

《the + 最上級 (+ 名詞) + in[of] …》

- ① Taro is **the tallest** in my class.
- ② Mike can run (**the**) **fastest** of the three boys.

**注意** (i) in と of の使い分け…… 《in + 場所・範囲を表す語》(①), 《of + 複数内容を表す語》(②)。  
(ii) 副詞の最上級では, the を省略することができる(②)。

**注意** 比較級・最上級の作り方

大部分の形容詞・副詞 …… (e)r, (e)st をつける	small - smaller - smallest big - bigger - biggest	large - larger - largest easy - easier - easiest
長いつぶりの形容詞・副詞 …… more, most を用いる	interesting - more interesting - most interesting difficult - more difficult - most difficult slowly - more slowly - most slowly carefully - more carefully - most carefully	
不規則変化	good[well] - better - best many[much] - more - most far - farther - farthest [距離]	bad[ill] - worse - worst little - less - least far - further - furthest [程度]

## 比較の重要構文

## 1 比較級を用いたもの

- a** 《比較級 + **than any other** + 単数名詞》「他のどの～よりも…」  
Mt. Fuji is higher **than any other** mountain in Japan.  
(= Mt. Fuji is the highest mountain in Japan.)
- b** 《Nothing … + 比較級 + **than** ～.》「～ほど～なものはない。」  
**Nothing** is more interesting **than** English.
- c** 《単位を表す名詞 + 比較級 + **than** ～》「～より～だけ…」  
She is **three years** younger **than** I am.  
(= She is younger than I am by three years.)
- d** 《**the** + 比較級 + **of the two**》「2つのうちで…のほう」  
Ken is **the** taller **of the two**.
- e** 《比較級 + **and** + 比較級》「だんだん～, ますます～」  
The world is becoming smaller **and** smaller.
- f** 《**the** + 比較級…, **the** + 比較級～》「…すればするほど, ますます～」  
**The** higher we go up, **the** colder it becomes.

## 2 最上級を用いたもの

- a** 《**one of the** + 最上級 + 複数名詞》「最も…のうちの1つ」  
Kyoto is **one of the** oldest cities in Japan.
- b** 《Which[Who] … **the** + 最上級, A, B **or** C?》  
**Which** is **the largest**, the sun, the earth **or** the moon?

## 3 原級を用いたもの

- a** 《… **times** + **as** + 原級 + **as** ～》「～の…倍の～」
- ① Australia is about twenty **times as** large **as** Japan.
- ② He has three **times as** many books **as** I do.
- 注意** (i) 「2倍」の場合は《… times》のかわりに twice を, 「2分の1 [半分]」の場合は half を用いる。  
(ii) 限定用法の形容詞の場合は, 《as + 原級 + 名詞 + as》の語順となる(②)。
- b** 《**as** ～ **as possible**[**as** ～ **as can**]》「できるだけ～」  
He ran **as fast as possible**. (= He ran **as fast as he could**.)
- c** 《Nothing … + **so**[**as**] + 原級 + **as** ～.》「～ほど～なものはない。」  
**Nothing** is **so** valuable **as** time. \* valuable 「貴重な」
- 注意** 人の比較の場合には, Nothing のかわりに Nobody[No one] を, 具体的な名詞の比較の場合には《No (other) + 単数名詞》を主語にした形になる。  
Nobody[No one] is as good as you.

## 練成問題

1 次の( )に入る最も適当な語(句)をそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

- (1) John is ( ) boy of the three.  
ア tall イ taller ウ the tallest [ ]
- \* (2) Ken can run ( ) than Mary.  
ア fastest イ faster ウ fast エ much fast [ ]
- (3) I cannot speak French as ( ) as Tom.  
ア good イ better ウ well [ ]
- (4) The boy can play the piano ( ) than your sister.  
ア well イ better ウ best [ ]
- (5) He can play tennis ( ) of all the boys in his class.  
ア good イ well ウ better エ best [ ]
- \* (6) His speech was as ( ) as hers.  
ア best イ good ウ well エ better [ ]
- (7) Which do you like ( ), summer or winter?  
ア best イ better ウ most エ very much [ ]
- (8) The moon isn't as ( ) as the sun.  
ア large イ larger ウ largest [ ]
- \* (9) Mt. Fuji is ( ) mountain in Japan.  
ア highest イ the most high ウ the highest [ ]
- (10) Who can swim ( ), John or Mary?  
ア fast イ faster ウ the fastest [ ]
- (11) This is ( ) better than that.  
ア much イ more ウ very [ ]
- (12) You have ( ) than my brother.  
ア many books イ more books ウ books more [ ]
- \* (13) We must study ( ① ) hard as we ( ② ).  
① ア as イ so ウ of エ on [ ]  
② ア can イ will ウ shall [ ]
- \* (14) My elder brother is ( ) as old as I am.  
ア half イ two ウ twice [ ]
- (15) She is one of the most famous ( ) in this town.  
ア woman イ women [ ]
- (16) This flower is prettier than ( ) other flower in the garden.  
ア all イ the ウ any [ ]

**語句**

(14) elder [兄弟・姉妹関係を表して] 年上の

2 次の \_\_\_\_\_ に、あとの( )内の語を適当な形に直して書きなさい。ただし、2語になる場合もあります。

- \*  (1) Taro is the \_\_\_\_\_ of the five. ( tall )
- \*  (2) He can ski much \_\_\_\_\_ than I can. ( well )
- (3) Who can ski \_\_\_\_\_ of all the girls? ( well )
- \*  (4) This dog is \_\_\_\_\_ than that one. ( big )
- (5) This question is the \_\_\_\_\_ of all. ( easy )
- (6) You look \_\_\_\_\_ in a white dress than in a blue one. ( pretty )
- (7) Mary is the \_\_\_\_\_ girl in my class. ( pretty )
- (8) This morning I got up the \_\_\_\_\_ in my family. ( early )
- (9) Who goes to bed \_\_\_\_\_, Jack or Betty? ( early )
- (10) August is the \_\_\_\_\_ month of the year. ( hot )
- \*  (11) Which is \_\_\_\_\_, this computer or that one? ( useful )
- (12) Your house stands \_\_\_\_\_ from the station than mine does. ( far )
- \*  (13) He is one of the \_\_\_\_\_ baseball players in our school. ( good )
- (14) New York is one of the biggest \_\_\_\_\_ in the world. ( city )
- \*  (15) It got \_\_\_\_\_ and \_\_\_\_\_. ( hot )
- \*  (16) The higher we climb up a mountain, the \_\_\_\_\_ the air becomes. ( thin )

語句

(16) thin (液体、気体が)薄い

3 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、\_\_\_\_\_に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) a) I am older than Hiroshi.  
b) Hiroshi is \_\_\_\_\_ than I am.
- (2) a) This question is easier than that.  
b) That question is \_\_\_\_\_ than this.
- (3) a) March is longer than February.  
b) February is not \_\_\_\_\_ March.
- (4) a) John does not work so hard \_\_\_\_\_ Ned.  
b) Ned \_\_\_\_\_ than John.
- \*  (5) a) Masao can swim better than I can.  
b) I \_\_\_\_\_ swim as \_\_\_\_\_ as Masao.
- (6) a) Tom is the tallest boy in his class.  
b) Tom is taller than \_\_\_\_\_ boy in his class.
- \*  (7) a) Tokyo is the biggest city in Japan.  
b) Tokyo is bigger than \_\_\_\_\_ in Japan.
- (8) a) He is cleverer than any other boy in his class.  
b) He is \_\_\_\_\_ boy in his class.

語句

(8) clever 賢い

# 発展問題

1 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) その4本の映画の中で1番おもしろいものはどれですか。 〈東京工業大学附属〉  
..... movie is the most interesting ..... the four?
- (2) 昔より今のほうが寿命がずっと長くなっている。 〈広島大学附属〉  
People ..... they did in the past.
- (3) 春休みの間にできるだけたくさんの本を読みなさい。 〈修道〉  
Read ..... many books ..... during the spring vacation.
- (4) 健はクラスのどの少年よりも背が高い。 〈文教大学付属〉  
Ken is ..... than ..... boy in his class.
- \*  (5) 時間ほど大切なものはない。 〈修道〉  
..... is ..... than time.
- \*  (6) 野球は日本で最も人気のあるスポーツのうちの1つです。  
Baseball is one of ..... sports in Japan.
- (7) 富士山は日本で1番高い山です。  
No ..... mountain in Japan is ..... Mt. Fuji.
- (8) 由美は健の約3倍のお金を持っています。 〈修道〉  
Yumi has about three times as ..... Ken.
- (9) その国の面積は日本の半分である。 〈ラ・サール〉  
The area of that country is ..... as large as ..... of Japan.
- \*  (10) 鳥はだんだん高く飛び上がりました。  
The birds flew up ..... and .....
- \*  (11) 今年は去年よりもずっと寒い。こんな寒い冬ははじめてです。 〈学習院〉  
It is much colder this year ..... I have never  
known such a cold winter .....
- (12) わたしの兄はクラスのだれよりも英語を話すのが上手です。  
My brother is a .....  
anyone else in his class.
- (13) アマゾン川は世界で2番目に長い川です。 〈早稲田実業〉  
The Amazon is the ..... river in the world.
- (14) あしたは遠足だから、いつもより早く起きないといけない。 〈修道〉  
Tomorrow is the day for the outing, so I have to get up .....
- \*  (15) わたしは野球よりもテニスが好きです。 〈山手学院〉  
I prefer tennis ..... baseball.

注意

(9) 「日本(の面積)の半分」と補って考える。

**2** 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- \*  (1) ① Health is the most important thing. 〈郁文館〉  
② ..... is so important as health.
- (2) ① Lake Biwa is the largest lake in Japan.  
② No ..... lake in Japan is ..... than Lake Biwa.
- (3) ① Betty can sing the best in her class.  
② ..... girl in her class can sing as ..... as Betty.
- \*  (4) ① No one is as beautiful as that woman. 〈日本大学〉  
② That woman is the ..... all.
- (5) ① Jiro is the best speaker of English in the class. 〈法政大学第二〉  
② No one in the class speaks English as ..... as Jiro.
- (6) ① Nothing is as difficult to do as this.  
② This is ..... difficult thing to do.
- (7) ① He prefers oranges to apples. 〈ラ・サール〉  
② He ..... oranges ..... apples.
- \*  (8) ① My father is younger than your father by three years.  
② Your father is ..... years ..... than my father.
- \*  (9) ① He has twice as many books as I do.  
② I have ..... as many books ..... he does.
- (10) ① He can run the fastest in his class.  
② He is ..... fastest ..... in his class.
- (11) ① We must do our best.  
② We must do ..... much ..... we .....
- ☐ (12) ① I've never seen such a beautiful doll as this.  
② This is ..... beautiful doll I've ever seen.

語句

(1) health 健康

**3** 次の文を、[ ]内の指示に従って書きかえなさい。

- \*  (1) You work harder than Dick. [Dickを主語にして]  
.....
- \*  (2) You cannot play tennis so well as my brother. [My brother canで始まる文に]  
.....
- (3) No boy in our class is so tall as Bob. [最上級を使って] 〈同志社〉  
.....
- \*  (4) No other boy in the class is so clever as Taro. [Taroを主語にして比較級を使って]  
.....
- (5) He is the tallest of all the boys in his class. [Heを主語にして比較級を使って]  
.....

4 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、( )内の語句を並べかえなさい。

(1) くだものの中ではオレンジが1番好きです。〔1語不足〕 (駿台甲府)  
( oranges / fruit / other / I / better / like / than ).

(2) マイクはクラスで1番背が高かった。  
( other / class / Mike / his / was / no / tall / so / student / in / as ).

\*  (3) わたしはできるだけ一生懸命に勉強した。〔1語不足〕 (城北)  
( I / I / hard / as / as / worked ).

(4) 海の旅ほど楽しいものはありません。  
( so / traveling / is / by / as / sea / pleasant / nothing ).

\*  (5) 彼の蔵書は彼女の蔵書の3倍です。 (巣鴨)  
( three / many / as / has / books / has / he / times / as / she ).

(6) その新しい体育館は古い体育館の2倍広くなります。〔1語不足〕 (早稲田実業)  
The ( gym / as / will / the / one / large / be / old / new / as ).

(7) この問題は君が想像していたより難しいかもしれない。〔1語不要〕 (法政大学第二)  
( more / this / than / may / is / problem / you / be / difficult / imagined ).

Ⓢ  (8) 正直であることより大切なことはありません。  
( than / nothing / important / is / to / be / honest / more / there ).

語句

(4) 海の旅 traveling by sea (8) 正直であること to be honest

5 次の日本語を英語に直しなさい。

(1) このバラは庭にあるすべての花の中で1番美しい。

(2) わたしの兄はあなたより5つ年上です。 (甲陽学院)

Ⓢ  (3) 先生の話ではドイツ語はフランス語より学びやすいそうです。

Ⓢ  (4) 彼は見かけほど年をとっていません。

語句

(3) 先生の話では…そうです。 Our teacher says (that) …. 学びやすい easy to learn

## 比較を含む連語

- ① **not as ~ as ...**  
She is not as tall as I.
- ② **as ~ as possible[as ~ as - can]**  
Read as many books as you can.
- ③ **as good as ...**  
This bike is as good as new.
- ④ **as usual**  
She came late as usual.
- ⑤ **at one's best**  
Summer is at its best now.
- ⑥ **at (the) least**  
I have at least fifty CDs.
- ⑦ **at (the) most**  
The library is at most 200 meters from there.
- ⑧ **less than ...**  
He'll be back in less than ten minutes.
- ⑨ **make the most of ...**  
I will make the most of this chance.
- ⑩ **more or less**  
The question may be more or less difficult.
- ⑪ **more than ...**  
More than 30 people came to the party.
- ⑫ **most of ...**  
Most of the students have a cell phone.
- ⑬ **no longer = not ~ any longer**  
You are no longer a child.
- ⑭ **no more = not ~ any more**  
She doesn't live there any more.
- ⑮ **not (~) in the least**  
I'm not in the least interested in soccer.
- ⑯ **prefer A to B**  
I prefer baseball to football.
- ⑰ **sooner or later**  
Sooner or later, he will realize that.
- ⑱ **than usual**  
I got up earlier than usual.
- ① ...ほど～ない  
彼女はわたしほど背が高くありません。
- ② できるだけ～  
できるだけたくさん本を読みなさい。
- ③ ...も同様  
この自転車は新品同様です。
- ④ いつものように  
彼女はいつものように遅れてきました。
- ⑤ 絶頂で  
今、夏たけなわです。
- ⑥ 少なくとも  
わたしは少なくとも50枚のCDを持っています。
- ⑦ 多くて、せいぜい  
図書館はそこからせいぜい200メートルくらいです。
- ⑧ ...以下  
彼は10分以内に戻ります。
- ⑨ ...を最大限に利用する  
わたしはこの機会を最大限に利用するつもりです。
- ⑩ 多かれ少なかれ、多少  
その質問は多少難しいかもしれません。
- ⑪ ...以上  
30人以上の人々がそのパーティーに来ました。
- ⑫ ...の大部分  
その生徒たちの大部分は携帯電話を持っています。
- ⑬ もはや～ない  
あなたはもう子供ではありません。
- ⑭ もはや～ない  
彼女はもうそこには住んでいません。
- ⑮ 少しも～でない  
わたしは少しもサッカーに興味がありません。
- ⑯ BよりAを好む  
わたしはフットボールより野球を好みます。
- ⑰ 遅かれ早かれ、早晚  
遅かれ早かれ、彼はそれに気づくでしょう。
- ⑱ いつもより  
わたしはいつもより早く起きました。

# 3 現在完了

## 現在完了の基本的用法

**注意** 現在完了 …… 現在完了は、《have[has]+過去分詞～》の形で、過去の動作・状態を、『現在との関連』において述べる時制で、《完了》、《結果》、《継続》、《経験》を表す用法がある。用法の区分は、ともに使われる語句および前後の文脈で判断できる。単に過去の事実を述べる過去形との違いに注意する。

### 1 《完了》を表す用法 …… 「(現在までに)～してしまった, ～したところだ」

- ① I **have just finished** my homework.
- ② I **have already had** breakfast.
- ③ **Have you finished** reading the book yet?  
— Yes, I **have**. / No, I **haven't**. [No, not yet.]  
\*短縮形 have not = haven't, has not = hasn't
- ④ I **haven't finished** reading the book yet.

**注意** (i) 《完了》とともによく用いられる副詞 …… just 「ちょうど」, already 「もう、すでに」, yet 「〔疑問文で〕もう」, 「〔否定文で〕まだ(～ない)」。文中での位置は、just, already はふつう have と過去分詞の間(①, ②), yet は文末(③, ④)に置く。(already は文末にくることもある → 強調)  
(ii) 現在完了の疑問文は、《Have[Has]+主語+過去分詞～?》(③), 否定文は have[has] not(④)の形。

### 2 《結果》を表す用法 …… 「～してしまった(その結果が残っている)」

- ① Spring **has come**.  
(= Spring came. It is here [It is spring now].)
- ② My brother **has gone** to school.  
(= My brother went to school. He isn't here now.)

**比較** **a** I lost my camera. [過去] 「なくした」(今、持っているかは不明)  
**b** I **have lost** my camera. [現在完了] 「なくしてしまった」(その結果、今も持っていない)

### 3 《継続》を表す用法 …… 「ずっと～している」

- ① I **have been** in Hokkaido since last Sunday.
- ② They **have lived** in Kobe for thirty years.
- ③ How long **have you been** in Japan? — For five months.
- ④ **a** My grandfather **has been** dead for three years.  
**b** Three years **have passed** since my grandfather died.  
**c** It is three years since my grandfather died.

**注意** (i) 《継続》とともによく用いられる副詞句 …… 《since + 時間の起点》「…以来」, 《for + 期間》「…の間」。  
(ii) since には接続詞の用法があり、《since + 主語 + 動詞》の形をとることができる(④ — **b**, **c**)。  
(iii) 「どのくらいの間」と期間をたずねるには、How long …? を用いる(③)。  
(iv) ④ — **a** では、亡くなった《状態》を表すので形容詞 dead, ④ — **b**, **c** では亡くなった《動作》を表すので動詞 die を用いる。

#### 4 《経験》を表す用法 ……「～したことがある」

- ① I **have met** her somewhere before.
- ② **Have you ever climbed** Mt. Fuji?
- ③ I **have** never **seen** such a beautiful picture (as this).  
(= This is the most beautiful picture (that) I have ever seen.)
- ④ How many times[How often] **have you traveled** by plane? — Only once.
- ⑤ I **have been to** the United States three times.

**注意**

- (i) 《経験》とともによく用いられる副詞(句) …… before「以前に」、ever「〔疑問文で〕今までに」、never「1度も～ない」、… times「…回」、once「かつて、1回」、twice「2回」。ever、neverはhaveと過去分詞の間に置く(②、③)。
- (ii) ③の書きかえ文は、「これはわたしが今までに見た(中で)最も美しい絵です。」の意。
- (iii) 「何回」と回数をたずねるには、How many times[How often] …? を用いる(④)。
- (iv) 「…へ行ったことがある」は、have been to …を用いる(⑤)、have gone to …はおもに《結果》「…へ行ってしまった(今、ここにはない)」(㉒—㉓)を表す場合に用いる。また、「…へ」の部分が、thereやabroadのような副詞の場合には、前置詞toは不要であることに注意する。
- (○) I have never been there.      (×) I have never been to there.

### 現在完了の注意すべき用法

#### 1 have been to の2つの意味

have been to …は、「…へ行ったことがある」と《経験》を表す以外に、「…へ行ってきたところだ(戻ってきてここにいる)」と《完了》を表す場合にも用いられる。

- ① I **have been to** Kyoto twice. 《経験》
- ② Where have you been? — I **have been to** the station to see my father off. 《完了》

#### 2 現在完了とともに用いられない語(句)

疑問詞のwhenや、yesterday、just now「たった今」などの過去を表す副詞(句)は現在完了とともに用いられない。(justまたはnow単独では可)

- a (○) When **did** your father come home?  
(×) When has your father come home?
- b (○) I **finished** reading the book yesterday.  
(×) I have finished reading the book yesterday.
- c (○) They **arrived** at the station just now.  
(×) They have arrived at the station just now.  
(○) They **have** just **arrived** at the station.  
(○) They **have arrived** at the station now.

## 練成問題

**1** 次の文中の《have[has]+過去分詞》は、ア 完了、イ 結果、ウ 継続、エ 経験のうち、どの用法にあたりますか。それぞれ記号で答えなさい。

- \*  (1) My sister has been ill for two weeks. [     ]
- (2) I have never seen a lion. [     ]
- \*  (3) We have already had dinner. [     ]
- \*  (4) I have lost my camera. [     ]
- \*  (5) I think I have met her somewhere before. [     ]
- (6) I haven't finished my homework yet. [     ]
- (7) Tokyo has become a large city. [     ]
- (8) Mr. Yamada has lived in many countries. [     ]
- (9) How long have you known Mr. Tanaka? [     ]
- (10) My brother has gone to Hokkaido. [     ]
- (11) Where have you been? — I've been to the library. [     ]
- (12) My father has been to the United States many times. [     ]
- (13) Kenji and Masao have been in Hakata since last week. [     ]

語句

(5) somewhere どこかで[に] (11) I've は I have の短縮形。

**2** 次の(     )に入る最も適当な語(句)をそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

- \*  (1) She has just (     ) the letter.  
ア write    イ wrote    ウ written [     ]
- (2) I have never (     ) such an interesting story.  
ア hear    イ heard    ウ hearing [     ]
- (3) We have not (     ) him since Monday.  
ア see    イ saw    ウ seen [     ]
- \*  (4) (     ) you ever been to Europe?  
ア Do    イ Did    ウ Have    エ Has [     ]
- (5) He has already (     ) his work.  
ア do    イ did    ウ done    エ doing [     ]
- \*  (6) Have you finished your work yet? — Yes, I (     ).  
ア did    イ have    ウ had    エ have been [     ]
- (7) How long have you (     ) English? — For three years.  
ア study    イ studied    ウ studying [     ]
- \*  (8) How many times have you (     ) to Okinawa?  
ア visited    イ been    ウ go    エ be [     ]
- (9) Who has (     ) the vase in the living room?  
ア break    イ broke    ウ broken    エ breaking [     ]

3 次の( )に入る最も適当な語(句)をそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

- \*  (1) I have known her ( ) five years.  
ア since イ from ウ before エ for [ ]
- \*  (2) My uncle has lived in Osaka ( ) 1999.  
ア before イ since ウ until エ in オ for [ ]
- (3) He has been ill in bed ( ) ten days.  
ア from イ to ウ since エ for [ ]
- (4) I have not heard from him ( ) last November.  
ア since イ from ウ for エ before [ ]
- (5) We have stayed in Kyoto ( ) two weeks.  
ア for イ in ウ since [ ]
- \*  (6) I have known him ( ) he was a little child.  
ア for イ from ウ since エ before [ ]
- \*  (7) Have you ever ( ) England?  
ア been イ gone ウ traveled エ visited [ ]
- \*  (8) He has never ( ) abroad till now.  
ア seen イ been ウ gone to エ been to [ ]
- (9) I ( ) Mr. Yamada last Friday.  
ア see イ saw ウ have seen エ am seeing [ ]
- (10) He ( ) English two years ago.  
ア has taught イ taught ウ is taught [ ]
- (11) I ( ) to the movies yesterday.  
ア go イ went ウ has gone エ has been [ ]
- \*  (12) Has Mike done his work? — Yes, he ( ) it about half an hour ago.  
ア has finished イ is finishing ウ finished エ was finishing [ ]
- \*  (13) They ( ) to play baseball since yesterday.  
ア want イ wanted ウ have wanted [ ]
- (14) He ( ) for the company for about 10 years.  
ア works イ is working ウ was working エ has worked [ ]
- (15) I have ( ) to Hawaii once.  
ア been イ going ウ went [ ]
- (16) Mike ( ) back just now.  
ア has come イ came ウ comes [ ]
- \*  (17) When ( ) here?  
ア has he arrived イ did he arrive ウ was he arrived エ he arrived [ ]
- (18) My mother ( ) when I came home.  
ア has cooked イ is cooking ウ cooks エ was cooking [ ]

語句

(4) hear from … …から便りがある (14) company 会社

4 次の \_\_\_\_\_ に、あとの( )内の語を適当な形に直して書きなさい。

- \*  (1) Have you ever \_\_\_\_\_ Kyoto? (visit)
- (2) I have \_\_\_\_\_ here for ten years. (live)
- \*  (3) How long has he \_\_\_\_\_ ill in bed? (be)
- (4) Have you ever \_\_\_\_\_ this kind of fish? (eat)
- \*  (5) I've \_\_\_\_\_ the movie already. (see)
- (6) Have you ever \_\_\_\_\_ about acid rain? (hear)
- (7) Have you \_\_\_\_\_ your name yet? (write)
- \*  (8) I've just \_\_\_\_\_ my homework. (do)
- (9) I have \_\_\_\_\_ your mother before. (meet)
- (10) How long have you \_\_\_\_\_ each other? (know)
- (11) My mother has just \_\_\_\_\_ home. (leave)
- \*  (12) Have you ever \_\_\_\_\_ in winter? (swim)
- (13) Has the baby \_\_\_\_\_ well? (sleep)
- (14) Has the waiter \_\_\_\_\_ a glass of water? (bring)
- \*  (15) I can't find my bag. Someone has \_\_\_\_\_ it. (steal)

語句

(15) steal 盗む

5 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、\_\_\_\_\_ に適する語を書きなさい。

- \*  (1) (a) Mr. Kato went to America. He is not here now.  
(b) Mr. Kato \_\_\_\_\_ to America.
- (2) (a) My parents went out. They are not at home now.  
(b) My parents \_\_\_\_\_ out.
- \*  (3) (a) He lost his dictionary. He doesn't have his dictionary now.  
(b) He \_\_\_\_\_ his dictionary.
- (4) (a) I lost my watch and I don't have it now.  
(b) I \_\_\_\_\_ my watch.
- (5) (a) Bob became sick two weeks ago. He is still sick now.  
(b) Bob \_\_\_\_\_ sick \_\_\_\_\_ two weeks.
- \*  (6) (a) Jane is ill. She got ill last month.  
(b) Jane \_\_\_\_\_ ill \_\_\_\_\_ last month.
- (7) (a) It was cold yesterday, and it is still cold now.  
(b) It \_\_\_\_\_ since yesterday.
- \*  (8) (a) I came to Tokyo seven years ago and I still live in Tokyo.  
(b) I \_\_\_\_\_ in Tokyo \_\_\_\_\_ seven years.
- (9) (a) My sister went to Hawaii three months ago. She is still there.  
(b) My sister \_\_\_\_\_ Hawaii \_\_\_\_\_ three months.

6 次の文のうち、英文として正しいものには○を、誤っているものには×を書きなさい。

- (1) My father has just came back from work. [ ]
- (2) I haven't never seen a koala. [ ]
- (3) I was busy since last week. [ ]
- (4) I have read this book twice. [ ]
- (5) We haven't had dinner already. [ ]
- (6) It has been sunny since yesterday. [ ]
- (7) Mary has visited her uncle last Sunday. [ ]
- (8) I haven't seen him since a long time. [ ]
- (9) Have you ever been to abroad? [ ]
- (10) My sister left for school just now. [ ]
- (11) When have you finished your homework? [ ]
- (12) My grandfather has been died for five years. [ ]
- (13) This is the most interesting movie I have never seen. [ ]

7 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、( )内の語句を並べかえなさい。

- \*  (1) あなたは今までに英語で手紙を書いたことがありますか。 (国立高専)  
Have ( letter / ever / in / written / a / you ) English?  
.....
- (2) わたしたちは知り合って10年になります。  
( other / we / each / ten / known / for / years / have ).  
.....
- (3) あんなに美しい日の入りは見たことはありません。  
( a / beautiful / have / I / never / seen / such / sunset ).  
.....
- \*  (4) 久しぶりですね。  
I ( time / a long / you / seen / for / haven't ).  
.....
- (5) わたしの父はヨーロッパに3回行ったことがあります。  
( has / times / to / my / three / father / Europe / been ).  
.....
- \*  (6) あなたはどのくらいこのホテルに滞在しているのですか。 [1語不足] (法政大学第二)  
( hotel / you / long / stayed / how / this / in )?  
.....
- \*  (7) あなたのお父さんは何回ニューヨークに行ったことがありますか。 (都立工業高専)  
( times / has / how / father / many / visited / your ) New York?  
.....

語句

(3) 日の入り sunset

# 発展問題

**1** 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- \*  (1) あなたは今までに英語で手紙を書いたことがありますか。  
..... you ..... a letter in English?
- \*  (2) わたしの弟は2度京都へ行ったことがあります。  
My brother ..... to Kyoto .....
- (3) あなたは日本に来てどのくらいになりますか。  
..... have you ..... in Japan?
- \*  (4) わたしはちょうどこの本を読み終えたところです。  
I ..... this book.
- \*  (5) この前彼女に会ってから2年になります。 〈日本大学〉  
Two years ..... since I saw her last.
- (6) わたしの兄は去年の夏からアメリカに行っています。  
My brother ..... America since last summer.
- (7) 彼は郵便局へ行ってきたところです。  
He ..... the post office.
- (8) 君は何回北海道に行ったことがありますか。 〈弘学館〉  
..... you visited Hokkaido?

**2** 次の文を、[ ]内の指示に従って書きかえなさい。

- \*  (1) Akio has already done his work. [否定文に] 〈東明館〉  
.....
- (2) I came to Tokyo three years ago. I am still in Tokyo. [1文で]  
.....
- (3) He came to Kyoto last October. He is still in Kyoto. [1文で]  
.....
- \*  (4) My father went to Europe. He is not here. [1文で]  
.....
- (5) I lost my umbrella. So I don't have it now. [1文で]  
.....
- (6) She is absent from school today. [下線部を since yesterday にかえて]  
.....
- (7) Jack has been in Japan for two years. [下線部が答えの中心となる疑問文に] 〈東明館〉  
.....
- (8) He has been to the country three times. [下線部が答えの中心となる疑問文に] 〈日本女子大学附属〉  
.....

**3** 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1)(a) It is ten years ..... my father died. 〈開成〉  
 (b) My father has been ..... for ten years.
- \*  (2)(a) My grandfather died five years ago. 〈成城学園〉  
 (b) My grandfather ..... for five years.
- (3)(a) I haven't heard from him for years. 〈郁文館〉  
 (b) It's years ..... I last heard from him.
- (4)(a) Ten years have passed since we last saw him. 〈青山学院〉  
 (b) We ..... him for ten years.
- (5)(a) Have you got any letters from him lately? 〈灘〉  
 (b) Have you ..... him of late?
- (6)(a) We haven't received her letter for a long time. 〈関西大学第一〉  
 (b) She ..... to us for a long time.
- (7)(a) We have had no rain for a month. 〈土佐塾〉  
 (b) ..... hasn't ..... for a month.
- (8)(a) Have you ever traveled .....? 〈成城学園〉  
 (b) Have you ever been ..... a foreign country?
- (9)(a) How many months have you been in Tokyo after moving? 〈大妻中野〉  
 (b) How many months have ..... since you moved to Tokyo?
- (10)(a) It is a long time since I saw you last. 〈久留米大学附設〉  
 (b) I ..... you for a long time.
- \*  (11)(a) I went to the library, and I have just come back.  
 (b) I have just ..... to the library.
- (12)(a) Bill and Mary went to the hospital, and have just come back. 〈桐蔭学園〉  
 (b) Bill and Mary ..... the hospital.
- \*  (13)(a) Mr. Austin teaches us English at our school. He came here two years ago. 〈愛光〉  
 (b) Mr. Austin ..... a teacher of English at our school  
..... two years.
- (14)(a) Taro and I became friends six years ago. 〈開成〉  
 (b) Taro ..... friend for six years.
- (15)(a) This is my first visit to Australia. 〈穎明館〉  
 (b) I ..... visited Australia before.
- (16)(a) This is the most interesting book I've ever read. 〈青雲〉  
 (b) I've ..... read such an interesting book ..... this.
- (17)(a) I've never seen such beautiful flowers.  
 (b) These are the most beautiful flowers I've .....

語句

(5) lately 最近 = of late (9) move 引越す

4 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、( )内の語句を並べかえなさい。

(1) わたしはこんな美しいメロディーを今までに聞いたことがありません。 (大妻中野)  
( such / this / melody / a / heard / I / as / beautiful / never / have ).

(2) 1週間ずっと晴れています。 [1語不要] (桐光学園)  
( had / it / fine weather / a / have / week / for / we ).

(3) 彼女は3年間、本当によく息子の面倒を見てくれました。  
She ( of / taken / care / has / my / good / son ) for three years.

(4) あなたは今までに何回アメリカに行ったことがありますか。 [1語不足] (文教大学付属)  
( the / times / you / many / United / been / how / have / to ) States?

\*  (5) あなたは今週何回学校に遅刻をしましたか。 [1語不要] (桐蔭学園)  
( many / how / late / been / have / school / you / often / for ) this week?

(6) わたしたちは子供のころからの友達です。 [1語不足] (成城)  
( children / friends / have / since / we / we / were ).

(7) 彼はこの前の土曜日からずっと病気で寝ています。 [1語不足] (法政大学第二)  
( Saturday / been / in / last / bed / has / ill / he ).

(8) わたしは友達を出迎えに空港へ行ってきました。 [1語不足]  
( I / to / to / my friend / have / airport / the / meet ).

\*  (9) わたしたちがここに引っ越してきてから3年が経ちます。 [1語不足] (穎明館)  
( since / here / years / moved / it / we / three ).

(10) わたしのおばが亡くなってから5年が経ちます。 [1語不要] (日本大学)  
( been / my / has / died / aunt / for / dead / five ) years.

\*  (11) あなたはいつから医者になりたいと思い始めたのですか。 (市川)  
( you / a / long / wanted / how / have / be / doctor / to )?

(12) 彼が高校を卒業してからわたしは1度も彼のうわさを聞いたことがない。 [1語不足] (穎明館)  
( from / have / him / school / never / graduated / high / of / he / I / heard ).

語句

(12) ...を卒業する graduate from ...

**5** 次の日本語を英語に直しなさい。

- (1) あなたは今までに英語で話したことがありますか。  
.....
- (2) あなたはどのくらい東京に住んでいるのですか。  
.....
- \*  (3) 日本に来て3年になります。しかし、京都を訪れたことはありません。 〈関西大学第一〉  
.....
- (4) ぼくはこれまでに3度京都へ行ったことがあります。 〈修道〉  
.....
- (5) 君はいつから彼と友達ですか。 〈土佐塾〉  
.....
- (6) わたしは外国に1度も行ったことはありません。 〈慶應義塾〉  
.....
- (7) わたしの弟はちょうど学校へ向けて家を出たところです。  
.....
- (8) あなたはホワイトさん (Mr. White) をお知りになってからどのくらいになりますか。  
.....
- (9) 君は彼と知り合ってどのくらいになりますか。 〈ラ・サール〉  
.....
- (10) あなたは何回、山登りをしたことがありますか。  
.....
- (11) 彼は1週間前から病気で寝ていると、わたしは聞いています。  
.....
- (12) わたしはおじを見送りに京都駅へ行ってきたところです。 〈立命館〉  
.....
- (13) どこへ行っていたの。— 病院へ行ってきたのです。 〈甲陽学院〉  
.....
- (14) わたしは高校生になってからずっと忙しい。  
.....
- (15) わたしはこんなにおもしろい物語を読んだことはありません。  
.....
- (16) わたしの父が亡くなってから5年になります。 [My father に続けて]  
.....
- \*  (17) わたしの祖父が亡くなって3年になります。 [three years を主語にして]  
.....
- (18) これはわたしが今までに見た最も大きな飛行機です。  
.....

語句

(11) …と(、わたしは)聞いています。 I hear ….

# 4 不定詞

## to 不定詞の基本3用法

《to + 動詞の原形》を to 不定詞といい、文中での働きによって、名詞的用法、形容詞的用法、副詞的用法の3つの用法がある。to を用いない原形不定詞と区別する。

### 名詞的用法

to 不定詞の名詞的用法は、「～すること」という意味を表し、名詞の働きをして、文の主語、動詞の目的語、補語になる。

#### 1 主語として

- ① **To play** tennis is a lot of fun.
- ② **To study** English is very important for us.

**注意** to 不定詞が主語になる場合は、単数扱いである。

#### 2 動詞の目的語として

- ① I want **to buy** a car.
- ② I hope **to go** to the United States.

**注意** (i) 不定詞を目的語にとる動詞…… want, like, try, begin, start, hope, need, decide 「決める, 決心する」, remember 「忘れずに～する」, forget 「忘れる」など。

(ii) want to ～ 「～したい」は、「～することを欲する」が直訳なので、この to ～ は名詞的用法(①)。

#### 3 補語として

- ① The best way is **to run** away.
- ② Her dream is **to become** a singer.

### 形容詞的用法

to 不定詞の形容詞的用法は、「～するための、～すべき」という意味を表し、形容詞の働きをして、(代)名詞をうしろから修飾する。

- ① I have a lot of homework **to do** today.
- ② I want something **to eat**.
- ③ Will you give me something cold **to drink**?
- ④ He has no friends **to play** with.

**注意** (i) 形容詞と不定詞がともに、something などを修飾する場合は、《-thing + 形容詞 + to ～》の語順(③)。

(ii) 不定詞が修飾する(代)名詞が、前置詞の意味上の目的語にあたる場合は、不定詞のうしろに前置詞が残る(④)。

**参考** He plays with his friends.

## 副詞的用法

to 不定詞の副詞的用法は、副詞の働きをして、動詞や形容詞を修飾する。

### 1 《目的》を表す …… 「～するために」

- ① I went to London **to see** my uncle.
- ② Be careful not **to catch** a cold.
- ③ Why did you go to America? — **To study** English.

**注意** (i) 不定詞の否定形 …… 不定詞の前にnotを置く(②)。

(ii) Whyで始まる疑問文に対し、その動作・行為の目的を答える場合には、不定詞のみを用いて答えることができる(③)。

### 2 《原因》を表す …… 「～して」

- ① I was happy **to see** you.
- ② They were surprised **to hear** the news.

**注意** (i) この用法では、感情を表す形容詞のうしろに不定詞を続ける。

(ii) 感情を表す形容詞の主な例 …… happy, glad, sad, surprised, sorry 「残念に思っ」、disappointed 「失望して」など。

### 3 《判断の根拠・理由》を表す …… 「～するなんて」

- ① He must be a fool **to say** so.  
(= He must be foolish **to say** so.)
- ② She must be a kind girl **to do** such a thing.

**注意** この用法では、人の性質を表す形容詞や名詞のうしろに不定詞を続ける。

### 4 《結果》を表す …… 「…して(その結果)～」

- ① He grew up **to be** a great man.  
(= He grew up and became a great man.)
- ② He lived **to be** eighty years old.  
(= He lived until he was eighty years old.)

### 5 《形容詞の意味の限定》を表す …… 「～するのが、～するには」

- ① This book is easy **to read**.
- ② This river is dangerous **to swim** in.

**注意** (i) この用法では、文の主語が不定詞の意味上の目的語にあたる。

(ii) この用法では、不定詞が直前の形容詞を修飾し、どういった点で易しいのか(①)[危険なのか(②)]のように、その形容詞が表す意味を限定する。

(iii) この用法で用いられる形容詞の主な例 …… easy, difficult, hard, dangerous など。

## 練成問題

1 次の文の下線部と同じ用法の不定詞を含む文をあとからそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

- \*  (1) I wanted to see him. [      ]  
ア I want something to eat.  
イ Mike went to Paris to study music.  
ウ It began to rain in the afternoon.
- (2) To learn a foreign language is important. [      ]  
ア There are many places to see in Tokyo.  
イ I tried to open the door, but I could not.  
ウ I came here to see you.
- (3) His hope in life is to become rich. [      ]  
ア He likes to play tennis.  
イ I went there to buy a camera.  
ウ I am glad to have you as a guest.  
エ He has many things to do today.
- \*  (4) Last Sunday I had a chance to see a football game. [      ]  
ア Please give me something to drink.  
イ To get up early is difficult for me.  
ウ He went to the United States to learn English.  
エ He decided to be a doctor at the age of ten.
- (5) Will you lend me something to write with? [      ]  
ア I was very sorry to hear the news.  
イ To learn English is interesting.  
ウ He has no friends to help him.
- \*  (6) I went to the station to meet my uncle. [      ]  
ア I have an interesting book to read.  
イ I studied hard to pass the entrance examination.  
ウ She wants to work in a hospital.
- (7) He was glad to hear the news. [      ]  
ア He planned to go to Europe.  
イ We were very happy to win the game.  
ウ I have a lot of work to do.
- (8) My grandfather lived to be seventy years old. [      ]  
ア She wanted to be a teacher.  
イ I want something to drink.  
ウ She grew up to be a beautiful woman.

2 次の( )に入る最も適当な語(句)をそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

(1) I have something ( ) you. 〈東洋大学附属牛久〉  
ア to tell イ tell ウ tells エ told [ ]

\*  (2) I'm so tired and thirsty that I want ( ). 〈青山学院〉  
ア something cold to drink イ something to drink cold [ ]  
ウ cold something to drink エ to something drink cold

(3) I get up early ( ) the first train.  
ア catch イ to catch ウ caught エ have caught [ ]

(4) A: Hi! You look very sad. 〈浦和明の星女子〉  
B: Well, I am very sorry ( ) that my favorite singer will not come to Japan this year.  
[ ]

ア hearing イ to hear ウ heard エ hear

3 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、\_\_\_\_\_に適する語を書きなさい。

(1)③ They decided that they would do it at once. 〈立命館〉  
④ They decided \_\_\_\_\_ it at once.

(2)③ I want to read an interesting book.  
④ I want an interesting book \_\_\_\_\_.

(3)③ My father must do a lot of work next Sunday. 〈高知学芸〉  
④ My father has a lot of work \_\_\_\_\_ next Sunday.

(4)③ I didn't have any homework to do yesterday.  
④ I had \_\_\_\_\_ homework \_\_\_\_\_ yesterday.

\*  (5)③ I was very happy when I got the letter from her. 〈土佐塾〉  
④ I was very happy \_\_\_\_\_ the letter from her.

4 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、\_\_\_\_\_に適する語を書きなさい。

\*  (1) 読書をするのはわたしにとってとてもおもしろい。  
\_\_\_\_\_ books \_\_\_\_\_ a lot of fun for me.

(2) わたしは今晚、することがたくさんあります。 〈学習院〉  
I have many \_\_\_\_\_ this evening.

(3) わたしはおなかがすいています。何か食べるものをください。  
I am hungry. Give me \_\_\_\_\_.

\*  (4) わたしは彼に会うためにそこへ行きました。  
I went there \_\_\_\_\_.

(5) 彼女は成長して美しい娘になりました。  
She grew up \_\_\_\_\_ a beautiful lady.

\*  (6) その人は90歳まで生きました。  
The man lived \_\_\_\_\_ ninety years old.

# 発展問題

**1** 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1)① There was no food in the room. 〈高知学芸〉  
 ② There wasn't anything ..... in the room.
- \*  (2)① I am free today. 〈学習院〉  
 ② I have ..... do today.
- (3)① Every morning I get up late, so I can't eat breakfast. 〈東京工業大学附属〉  
 ② Every morning I get up so late that I have no ..... to eat breakfast.
- (4)① He grew up and became a great scientist.  
 ② He grew up ..... be a great scientist.
- (5)① The news made her happy.  
 ② She was happy to ..... the news.
- (6)① There are many beautiful spots to visit in Kyoto. 〈城北〉  
 ② Kyoto ..... many beautiful spots .....
- \*  (7)① Remember to say hello to your parents.  
 ② Don't ..... to say hello to your parents.
- (8)① Swimming in this river is dangerous. 〈中央大学附属〉  
 ② This river is dangerous .....
- (9)① You have to study hard to do well in school. 〈土佐塾〉  
 ② If you ..... to do well in school, you must study hard.
- \*  (10)① I am very fond of reading books. 〈同志社〉  
 ② I ..... read books very .....
- (11)① My grandfather lived to be eighty years old. 〈開成〉  
 ② My grandfather lived ..... he was eighty years old.

**語句**

(7) say hello to ... ... によろしくと伝える

**2** 次の日本文に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) 彼は忙しくて本を読む時間がほとんどありません。 〈明治学院〉  
 He is ..... busy that he has ..... time ..... read books.
- (2) 書くものがありません。わたしにペンを貸してください。 〈中央大学附属〉  
 I have nothing ..... Please lend me your pen.
- \*  (3) 100歳まで生きる人は少ない。  
 Few people ..... a hundred years old.
- \*  (4) 彼はそこへ行かないことにしました。  
 He decided ..... go there.
- (5) このコンピュータは使いやすい。  
 This computer is .....

**3** 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、( )内の語句を並べかえなさい。

(1) 彼は彼女を見送りに東京駅へ行きました。  
( went / he / off / see / Tokyo Station / to / to / her ).

(2) 何か温かい飲み物をください。〔1語不要〕 〈俊成学園〉  
Please give ( to / that / something / me / drink / hot ).

(3) トムにはいっしょに遊ぶ友人がほとんどいませんでした。  
Tom ( friends / play / few / to / with / had ).

(4) トーストをこがさないように気をつけなさい。  
Be ( not / the / toast / burn / to / careful ).

(5) この宿題をするのは、あなたには簡単だろう。〔1語不足〕 〈開成〉  
( easy / you / homework / will / to / for / do / this ).

(6) わたしは彼が亡くなったという知らせを聞いて悲しく思いました。〔1語不要〕 〈駒込〉  
I ( felt / because / the / sad / of / to / hear / news ) his death.

(7) このいすは座り心地がよい。〔1語不足〕 〈開成〉  
( chair / comfortable / to / this / sit / is ).

語句

(4) …をこがす burn … (6) death 死 (7) 心地がよい comfortable

**4** 次の日本語を、不定詞を用いて英語に直しなさい。

(1) 彼女は音楽を学びにオーストリア(Austria)へ行く決心をしました。

(2) ここには見るべきおもしろいものは何もありません。

(3) その貧しい家族には住む家がありません。 〈関西学院〉

(4) その少年たちは成長して立派な青年になりました。 〈名古屋大学教育学部附属〉

(5) わたしの夢は貧しい人々を助けるためにボランティアとして働くことです。

(6) 外国に住むのが外国語を習う最善の方法だ。〔abroad, is, way, foreign を用いて〕 〈江戸川学園取手〉

語句

(4) 立派な青年 fine young man (5) ボランティア volunteer

# 5 不定詞を含む構文

## 不定詞を含む構文①

### 1 形式主語 it を用いた構文

#### a It ... to ~. 「～するのは…だ。」

It is important **to learn** a foreign language.

(= To learn a foreign language is important.)

**注意** この it は、不定詞の代わりに仮の主語として用いられるもので、形式[仮]主語という。これに対し、不定詞に導かれた名詞句を真主語という。

#### b It ... for - to ~. 「-が[にとって]～するのは…だ。」

It is easy **for me to use** a computer.

**注意** 《for -》「-にとって」の部分が、不定詞の意味上の主語を表す。代名詞の場合は目的格を用いる。

#### c It ... of - to ~. 「-が～するのは…だ。」

It is kind **of you to help** me.

(= You are kind to help me.)

**注意** b と c における for と of の使い分け …… 人の性質を表し、人を主語とすることのできる形容詞(kind, careless 「不注意な」、clever 「賢明な」、foolish[stupid] 「愚かな」など)の場合に of を用いる。

### 2 ask[tell, want] - to ~ 「-に～するように頼む[言う, 望む]」など

① I **asked** him **to open** the window.

② My father **told** me **not to go** there.

③ a I **want** you **to read** more books.

b I **would like** you **to read** more books.

**注意** (i) 「～ないように」という場合は、不定詞の否定形 not to ~ を用いる(②)。

(ii) would like - to ~ は、want - to ~ よりも丁寧な表現(③ - b)。

(iii) この構文をとる他の動詞の例 …… order 「命令する」、advise 「忠告する」、allow 「許す」、cause 「引き起こす」、enable 「可能にする」など。

### 3 《疑問詞 + to ~》「何を[いつ/どうやって]～すべきか」など

① I didn't know **what to do**.

② Please tell me **when to start**.

③ Do you know **how to use** this computer?

④ I don't know **which book to read**.

**注意** (i) 《疑問詞 + to ~》は名詞句である。ふつう動詞の目的語になる。

(ii) 疑問詞が形容詞の働きをして名詞を修飾している場合には、《疑問詞 + 名詞 + to ~》の語順となる(④)。

## 不定詞を含む構文②

## 1 too ... to ~ 「とても…なので～できない, ～するには…すぎる」

- ① He was **too** tired **to** walk any more.  
(= He was so tired that he could not walk any more.)
- ② This book is **too** difficult for me **to** read.  
(= This book is so difficult that I can't read it.)

- 注意** (i) 《too ... to ~》は, 《so ... that - can't ~》を用いて書きかえられる。  
(ii) 「-にとって」と, 不定詞の意味上の主語を表す場合は, 《for -》を不定詞の前に置く(②)。  
(iii) ②のように, 文の主語(This book)が不定詞(to read)の意味上の目的語にあたる場合, 《so ... that - can't ~》に書きかえた文中では, 動詞のうしろに目的語(it = this book)を補う必要がある。

## 2 enough to ~ 「～するのに十分..., ～できるほど...」

- ① He was kind **enough** **to** show me the way.  
(= He was so kind that he showed me the way.)  
(= He was so kind as to show me the way.)
- ② The question was easy **enough** for me **to** answer.  
(= The question was so easy that I could answer it.)
- ③ I don't have **enough** money **to** buy a new car.

- 注意** (i) enough は形容詞[副詞]を修飾する場合, 《形容詞[副詞] + enough》の語順となることに注意(①, ②)。  
(ii) 《... enough to ~》は, 《so ... that ~》や 《so ... as to ~》を用いて書きかえられる(①, ②)。  
(iii) 「-にとって」と, 不定詞の意味上の主語を表す場合は, 《for -》を不定詞の前に置く(②)。  
(iv) enough は形容詞として名詞を修飾する場合は, ふつう《enough + 名詞》の語順となる(③)。

## 不定詞を含む表現

- a** in order to ~ / so as to ~ 「～するために」  
I got up early **in order to** catch the first bus.
- b** be sure to ~ 「きっと～する」  
He **is sure to** pass the examination.
- c** happen to ~ 「たまたま～する」  
We **happened to** meet Tom at the station.
- d** seem to ~ 「～のように見える, ～らしい」  
She **seems to** be a kind girl.

## 練成問題

1 次の( )に入る最も適当な語(句)をそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

- (1) It's very difficult ( ) you to finish the work in a week.  
ア on イ for ウ by エ from [ ]
- (2) It's very kind ( ) you to help me. (青山学院)  
ア for イ of ウ to エ with [ ]
- \*  (3) I want you ( ) old people. (城北埼玉)  
ア are helping イ help ウ to help エ will help [ ]
- (4) The teacher told the boys ( ) in the classroom. (栄東)  
ア to not shout イ not to shout ウ not shouting エ shout not [ ]
- \*  (5) He kindly showed me ( ) this computer. (中央大学附属)  
ア how using イ how use ウ how to use エ how should use [ ]
- (6) She spoke ( ) fast for me to understand. (青雲)  
ア enough イ so ウ such エ too [ ]
- \*  (7) A: Is he going to school next year? (東邦大学附属東邦)  
B: No, not yet. He isn't ( ) to go to school. [ ]  
ア young enough イ old enough ウ too young エ so old
- (8) He went to the park in order ( ) tennis with his friends. (江戸川学園取手)  
ア playing イ play ウ played エ to play [ ]

語句

(4) shout 大声を出す

2 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) 英語を理解することはわたしにとって容易ではなかった。 (城北)  
..... was not easy ..... to understand English.
- \*  (2) そう言ってくださってありがとうございます。 (灘)  
It's very kind ..... you to say so.
- (3) わたしは彼に窓を開けるように言いました。  
I told ..... open the windows.
- (4) わたしはあなたにすぐに来てもらいたいです。  
I want ..... at once.
- \*  (5) わたしは彼女の誕生日に何を買ったらよいのかわからない。 (大阪教育大学附属平野)  
I don't know ..... on .....
- (6) 彼らは何も言えないほど疲れていた。 (広島大学附属)  
They were ..... anything.
- (7) その小さいナイフは肉が切れるほど鋭い。 (大阪女学院)  
The small knife is ..... cut the meat.

語句

(7) 鋭い sharp

3 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- \*  (1) a To have good friends is important. 〈江戸川学園取手〉  
b ..... is important ..... have good friends.
- \*  (2) a I'm so busy that I cannot help you. 〈高知学芸〉  
b I'm ..... busy ..... help you.
- (3) a You are very kind to help me. 〈海城〉  
b It is very kind ..... you to help me.
- (4) a He was stupid to do such a thing.  
b It was stupid ..... to do such a thing.
- \*  (5) a He was lucky enough to get the present.  
b He was ..... lucky ..... he could get the present.

4 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、( )内の語句を並べかえなさい。

- \*  (1) 早起きは健康によい。〔1語不足〕  
( good / up / to / our / early / for / get / it / health ).  
.....
- (2) 彼女がそんな短時間で帰ってくるのは不可能でしょう。 〈広島大学附属福山〉  
It is impossible ( come / her / for / a / time / back / in / short / such / to ).  
.....
- (3) 母はわたしが偉大な音楽家になることを望んでいます。  
( great / my mother / to / me / wants / a / musician / be ).  
.....
- \*  (4) ジョンは医者に水曜日に診察してくれるように頼みました。〔1語不要〕  
( doctor / him / for / Wednesday / see / John / on / the / to / asked ).  
.....
- (5) わたしの弟はどこに行ってもよいのかわかりませんでした。〔1語不要〕  
( to / he / didn't / brother / know / go / my / where ).  
.....
- \*  (6) その机はとても重いので持ち上げられません。〔1語不足〕 〈法政大学第二〉  
( lift / desk / heavy / the / for / to / is / me ).  
.....
- (7) トムは親切にもわたしの宿題を手伝ってくれた。 〈開成〉  
( was / to / enough / me / my / Tom / homework / help / with / kind ).  
.....
- (8) このコンピュータはポケットに入れて運べるくらい小さい。 〈大妻中野〉  
( is / enough / this / pocket / small / computer / to / in / carry / the ).  
.....

語句

(4) ...を診察する see ...

# 発展問題

**1** 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) わたしたちはこの問題について考える必要があります。  
..... is necessary ..... us ..... think about this problem.
- \*  (2) 列車を乗り間違えるなんて彼はどうかしています。  
It is careless ..... take the wrong train.
- \*  (3) お医者さんは彼に食べすぎないように言いました。 〈慶應義塾〉  
The doctor ..... him ..... too much.
- (4) 君はわたしに何をしてほしいの。 〈広島大学附属〉  
What ..... do?
- \*  (5) わたしはどのバスに乗ったらよいか彼女にききました。 〈函館ラ・サール〉  
I asked her ..... take.
- (6) このかばんは彼女が運ぶには重すぎます。 〈都立工業高専〉  
This bag is too heavy ..... her ..... carry.
- \*  (7) 彼女は親切にも魚の料理の仕方を教えてくれた。 〈お茶の水女子大学附属〉  
She was ..... show me .....
- (8) この本は子供が読めるくらい十分にやさしい本だ。 〈浦和明の星女子〉  
This book is ..... kids to read.
- (9) 彼女は親切にもわたしたちを駅まで連れていってくれました。  
She was so kind ..... take us to the station.
- (10) 当時われわれには、テレビを買うだけの金はなかった。 〈成城学園〉  
We didn't have ..... money ..... buy a television set at that time.
- \*  (11) 彼はきっと来る。 〈灘〉  
He is ..... to come.

語句

(8) kid 子供

**2** 次の文を、[ ]内の指示に従って書きかえなさい。

- \*  (1) We cannot answer the question because it is very difficult. [too ... to ~を用いて]  
.....
- (2) The woman was so kind that she took me to the bank. [不定詞を用いて]  
.....
- (3) This suit is too small for my son to wear. [so ... that ~を用いて] 〈成城〉  
.....
- (4) The book is so difficult that I cannot read it. [不定詞を用いて]  
.....

語句

(3) suit スーツ

3 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1)(a) He can read this book easily.  
(b) ..... is easy ..... read this book.
- (2)(a) You don't have to meet him there. (修道)  
(b) It isn't necessary ..... meet him there.
- (3)(a) We cannot fly like birds. (東海)  
(b) It is ..... for us ..... fly like birds.
- \*  (4)(a) Mike said to me, "Will you open the window?" (日本大学)  
(b) Mike asked me ..... the window.
- \*  (5)(a) Father said to me, "Don't tell a lie." (久留米大附設)  
(b) Father told me ..... tell a lie.
- (6)(a) Shall I help you with the dishes? (大阪星光学院)  
(b) ..... you ..... me to help you with the dishes?
- (7)(a) Please send a message to him at once. (早稲田実業)  
(b) I want ..... send a message to him at once.
- (8)(a) My little brother can use a telephone.  
(b) My little brother knows ..... use a telephone.
- \*  (9)(a) Do you know the time to start? (成城)  
(b) Do you know ..... start?
- (10)(a) She was too tired to get up early. (森村学園)  
(b) She was ..... tired ..... she ..... get up early.
- (11)(a) This coffee is too hot for me to drink. (慶應義塾)  
(b) This coffee is so hot that I .....
- (12)(a) As he is rich, he can buy a piano. (海城)  
(b) He is rich ..... to buy a piano.
- (13)(a) He kindly ..... me the book. (桐朋)  
(b) He was kind ..... to lend me the book.
- \*  (14)(a) I was fortunate enough to win the prize. (灘)  
(b) I was ..... fortunate ..... to win the prize.
- (15)(a) Jack is not old enough to travel alone. (甲陽学院)  
(b) Jack is ..... to travel alone.
- (16)(a) She was too shocked to speak any more. (愛光)  
(b) She was so shocked that ..... for her to speak any more.
- \*  (17)(a) It happened that I met an old friend in the train. (愛光)  
(b) I ..... an old friend in the train.

語句

- (5) tell a lie うそをつく (16) shocked ショックを受けて  
(17) It happens that ... たまたま…だ。

4 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、( )内の語句を並べかえなさい。

\*  (1) わたしは彼にその機械の使い方を教えてくれるように頼みました。

I ( him / how / machine / use / asked / teach / the / me / to / to ).

(2) 彼に2度とそんな間違いをしないように言っておきなさい。

( him / make / tell / such / not / mistake / again / to / a ).

(3) 彼女はとても小さいので、その石は持ち上げられません。 [2つ不要]

〈慶應義塾志木〉

( hold / cannot / is / the stone / enough / she / to / big / not / lift ).

(4) この家は彼らが住むには小さすぎる。

〈東明館〉

( is / too / for / this / in / them / live / to / small / house ).

(5) きょうの午後、あなたに赤ん坊を見てもらいたい。

〈近畿大学附属〉

( my / look / baby / to / after / would / like / you / I ) this afternoon.

5 次の日本語を英語に直しなさい。

\*  (1) あなたがたにとって、本をたくさん読むことはとても重要です。

(2) このコーヒーはとても熱くてわたしには飲めません。

〈日本大学第三〉

(3) きょうはすることが多くて、君と魚釣りに行けません。

〈ラ・サール〉

(4) 彼女は母親の手伝いができる年齢です。 [不定詞を用いて]

〈青雲〉

(5) ぼくはこの本が買えるだけのお金を持っています。

(6) わたしはこのナイフの使い方がわかりません。

(7) 母はわたしに部屋を掃除するように言いました。

〈修道〉

(8) 多くの母親が息子にもっと勉強して欲しいと思っています。

〈甲陽学院〉

(9) とうとうわたしたちは数学の先生に答えを教えてくださいのように頼みました。

〈高知学芸〉

語句

(9) とうとう at last

## 不定詞を含む連語

- ① **be about to ~**  
When I was about to go out, the phone rang.
- ② **be likely to ~**  
He is likely to succeed.
- ③ **be ready to ~**  
I am ready to go to school.
- ④ **be sure to ~**  
It is sure to rain.
- ⑤ **be willing to ~**  
I am willing to help you.
- ⑥ **… enough to ~**  
He was kind enough to help us.
- ⑦ **fail to ~**  
He failed to do his homework.
- ⑧ **get to ~ / come to ~**  
How did you get to know her?
- ⑨ **happen to ~**  
I happened to find an interesting book.
- ⑩ **in order to ~ / so as to ~**  
He worked hard in order to help poor people.
- ⑪ **make up one's mind to ~**  
I made up my mind to be a doctor.
- ⑫ **manage to ~**  
We managed to finish this work.
- ⑬ **prove to ~ / turn out to ~**  
She proved to be kind.
- ⑭ **seem to ~ / appear to ~**  
You seem to be sick.
- ⑮ **so … as to ~**  
He is so rich as to buy anything.
- ⑯ **too … to ~**  
It was too hot to sleep last night.
- ⑰ **would like to ~**  
I would like to drink something cold.
- ⑱ **would like - to ~**  
I would like you to come to the party.
- ① ~しようとしている  
わたしが出かけようとしたとき、電話が鳴りました。
- ② ~しそうである  
彼は成功しそうです。
- ③ ~する準備ができている  
わたしは学校へ行く準備ができています。
- ④ きっと~する  
きっと雨が降ります。
- ⑤ 喜んで~する  
わたしは喜んであなたをお手伝いします。
- ⑥ ~するのに十分…、~できるほど…  
彼は親切にもわたしたちを助けてくれました。
- ⑦ ~しない、~しそびれる  
彼は宿題をしませんでした。
- ⑧ ~するようになる  
あなたはどうやって彼女と知り合ったのですか。
- ⑨ たまたま~する  
わたしはたまたまおもしろい本を見つけました。
- ⑩ ~するために  
彼は貧しい人々を助けるために一生懸命働きました。
- ⑪ ~することを決心する  
わたしは医者になる決心をしました。
- ⑫ なんとか~する  
わたしたちはなんとかこの仕事をやり終えました。
- ⑬ ~だとわかる  
彼女は親切だとわかりました。
- ⑭ ~のように見える、~らしい  
あなたは具合が悪そうです。
- ⑮ とても…なので~できる  
彼はとても金持ちなので何でも買えます。
- ⑯ とても…なので~できない、~するには…すぎる  
昨夜は暑すぎて眠れませんでした。
- ⑰ ~したい  
わたしは何か冷たいものをいただきたいです。
- ⑱ ーに~してもらいたい  
あなたにパーティーに来ていただきたいです。

## 6

## 動名詞

## 動名詞の形と用法

## 1 動名詞の形

動名詞は、動詞の原形に ing をつけて作る。形は現在分詞と同じだが、現在分詞が形容詞と動詞の働きを兼ねるのに対し、動名詞は名詞と動詞の働きを兼ね、「～すること」の意味で、目的語や補語をとったり、副詞に修飾されたりする。

## 2 動名詞の用法

## a 主語として

Playing tennis is a lot of fun. (= To play tennis is a lot of fun.)

- 注意** (i) 主語の動名詞は、不定詞の名詞的用法でも同じ意味を表すことができる。  
(ii) 主語の動名詞は単数扱いである。

## b 動詞の目的語として

I like **singing** very much.

## c 補語として

My hobby is **collecting** stamps.

- 注意** 補語の動名詞は、不定詞の名詞的用法でも同じ意味を表すことができる。

- 比較** a His work is **repairing** cars. [動名詞] 「修理すること」  
b He is **repairing** the car now. [現在分詞] 「修理している」

## d 前置詞の目的語として

- ① I am fond of **cooking**.  
② He went out without **saying** a word.

- 注意** 前置詞の目的語に、不定詞の名詞的用法を用いることは原則不可。  
(×) I am fond of to cook.

## 動名詞を含む慣用表現

- a cannot help ~ing 「～せずにはられない」  
b look forward to ~ing 「～するのを楽しみにして待つ」  
c How about ~ing? 「～してはどうですか。」  
d go ~ing 「～しに行く」  
e go[keep] on ~ing 「～し続ける」  
f be[get] used to ~ing 「～することに慣れている[慣れる]」  
g there is no ~ing 「～することができない」  
h prevent[keep] ... from ~ing 「…が～するのを妨げる」  
i have difficulty (in) ~ing 「～することに苦勞する」  
j It is ... ~ing. 「～することは…である。」

## 動名詞と不定詞

動名詞と名詞的用法の不定詞は、「～すること」という意味を表す点で共通の働きをすることから、互いに置きかえて使うことができる場合がある。ただし、言葉のニュアンスとして完全にイコールの関係にはならないことがある。また、動詞によって動名詞だけを伴うもの、不定詞だけを伴うものがある。

### 1 動名詞だけを目的語にとる動詞

finish, enjoy, mind(気にかける, いやだと思う), keep, miss, practice, give up(あきらめる, やめる), put off(延期する)など。

① I **finished** reading the book yesterday.

② **a** Would[Do] you **mind** shutting the door?

**b** Would[Do] you **mind** my[me] shutting the door?

**注意** (i) ② — **a** は《依頼》, ② — **b** は《許可》を求める表現。

(ii) 動名詞の直前に(代)名詞の所有格または目的格を置くと、動名詞の意味上の主語を表し、「…が～すること」という意味になる(② — **b**)。

### 2 不定詞だけを目的語にとる動詞

want, wish, hope, decide, expect(期待する), agree(同意する)など。

I **want** to see your father.

### 3 動名詞・不定詞のいずれも伴う動詞

**a** 同じ意味を表すもの

begin, start, like, hate(いやがる, 嫌う), continue(続ける), prefer など。

It **began** raining[to rain] just now.

**b** 異なる意味を表すもの

① **stop ~ing** 「～するのをやめる」と **stop to ~** 「～するために立ち止まる」

**a** I **stopped** talking to him.

**b** I **stopped** to talk to him.

**注意** **b** の to talk は目的語ではなく、副詞的用法の不定詞。

② **remember ~ing** と **forget ~ing** / **remember to ~** と **forget to ~**

動名詞の場合は、「(過去において)～したことを覚えている[忘れる]」、不定詞は「(これから)～するのを覚えている[忘れる]」

**a** I **remember** seeing him.

**b** Don't **forget** to see him.

③ **try ~ing** 「ために～してみる」と **try to ~** 「～しようと努める」

**a** He **tried** writing to her, but she did not reply.

**b** He **tried** to write to her, but he could not.

## 練 成 問 題

**1** 次の( )に入る最も適当な語(句)をそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

- \*  (1) ( ) football was interesting for us. 〈比治山女子〉  
 ア Playing イ Plays ウ Played エ Play [ ]
- (2) They enjoyed ( ) to music after dinner.  
 ア listen イ to listen ウ listening [ ]
- (3) We went out, because it stopped ( ).  
 ア rain イ to rain ウ rained エ raining [ ]
- \*  (4) His work is ( ) cars.  
 ア wash イ washing ウ washed [ ]
- \*  (5) He left his house without ( ) a word.  
 ア say イ to say ウ saying エ said [ ]
- (6) Thank you very much for ( ) to me soon.  
 ア writing イ wrote ウ to write エ write [ ]
- (7) When I think of ( ) Tokyo, I am always sad. 〈流通経済大学附属柏〉  
 ア left イ leaving ウ leaves [ ]
- \*  (8) My father went ( ) in the river yesterday.  
 ア to fish イ fish ウ fishing [ ]
- (9) She is looking forward ( ) her uncle. 〈海城〉  
 ア to see イ seeing ウ to seeing [ ]
- (10) Are you fond of ( ) to the movies?  
 ア go イ went ウ going [ ]
- (11) He is good at ( ) English. 〈法政大学第二〉  
 ア speak イ spoke ウ to speak エ speaking [ ]
- (12) I would like ( ) to Hokkaido next summer.  
 ア go イ going ウ to go [ ]
- (13) I enjoyed ( ) yesterday.  
 ア ski イ skied ウ to ski エ skiing [ ]
- (14) Did you finish ( ) the grass in the garden?  
 ア cutting イ cut ウ to cut [ ]
- \*  (15) Would you mind ( ) the window? 〈学習院〉  
 ア open イ to open ウ opening [ ]
- \*  (16) He stopped ( ) the newspaper and began to watch TV.  
 ア read イ reading ウ to read [ ]
- \*  (17) We stopped ( ) at a restaurant because we were hungry.  
 ア eat イ to eat ウ eating [ ]

**2** 次の \_\_\_\_\_ に、あとの( )内の語を適当な形に直して書きなさい。ただし、2語になる場合もあります。

- (1) \_\_\_\_\_ to these CDs is very relaxing. (listen)
- \*  (2) My sister likes \_\_\_\_\_ pictures very much. (paint)
- (3) My father went \_\_\_\_\_ with me yesterday. (shop)
- (4) It stopped \_\_\_\_\_ before we left home this morning. (snow)
- (5) Before \_\_\_\_\_ to bed, you must brush your teeth. (go)
- (6) My brother is good at \_\_\_\_\_ a car. (drive)
- \*  (7) Don't be afraid of \_\_\_\_\_ mistakes in speaking English. (make)
- (8) I know she is poor at \_\_\_\_\_. (ski)
- (9) Mike left the room without \_\_\_\_\_ a word. (say)
- (10) They are thinking of \_\_\_\_\_ back to New York. (move) 〈お茶の水女子大学附属〉
- (11) Thank you for \_\_\_\_\_ us to dinner. (invite)
- \*  (12) He will leave his office at ten. So don't forget \_\_\_\_\_ him at his office before ten. (visit)
- \*  (13) I couldn't help \_\_\_\_\_ when she sang. (laugh) 〈青山学院〉
- \*  (14) You will get used to \_\_\_\_\_ in this climate. (live) 〈お茶の水女子大学附属〉
- \*  (15) I am looking forward to \_\_\_\_\_ the news of your success. (hear) 〈灘〉
- \*  (16) She enjoyed \_\_\_\_\_ on the grass. (lie) 〈東海〉
- (17) I want you \_\_\_\_\_ the room. (clean)
- \*  (18) I remember \_\_\_\_\_ that man. (see) 〈土佐塾〉
- (19) I would like you to stop \_\_\_\_\_ here. (smoke) 〈日本大学第三〉

**語句**

- (1) relaxing くつろがせる (19) smoke タバコを吸う

**3** 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、\_\_\_\_\_に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) a It is important for you to do your best.  
 b \_\_\_\_\_ your best is important for you.
- (2) a He had a cup of coffee before he took a bath. 〈法政大学第二〉  
 b He had a cup of coffee before \_\_\_\_\_ a bath.
- (3) a I like to read books about animals.  
 b I am interested in \_\_\_\_\_ books about animals.
- (4) a He didn't say anything when he left the room. 〈広島大学附属〉  
 b He left the room \_\_\_\_\_ anything.
- \*  (5) a Shall we go to the movies tomorrow?  
 b How \_\_\_\_\_ to the movies tomorrow?
- (6) a He plays tennis very well. 〈名古屋大学教育学部附属〉  
 b He is very \_\_\_\_\_ tennis.
- \*  (7) a We walked in the park. We enjoyed it very much. 〈修道〉  
 b We \_\_\_\_\_ in the park very much.

# 発展問題

1 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) その川を泳いで渡るのは簡単だ。 〈高知学芸〉  
..... the river is easy.
- (2) 駅へ行く道を教えてくれてありがとう。  
Thank you ..... the way to the station.
- \*  (3) パーティーでお目にかかるのを楽しみにしています。 〈甲陽学院〉  
I'm looking forward ..... you at the party.
- (4) 高得点することが人生において唯一のことではない。 〈土佐〉  
..... high marks ..... the only thing in life.
- (5) わたしは英語を話すとき、間違うのを恐れません。 〈法政大学第二〉  
I am not afraid of ..... in .....
- (6) わたしは彼が歌ったとき笑わざるをえなかった。 〈青山学院〉  
I couldn't ..... when he sang.
- (7) 学校に出かける前に 30 分ほど勉強した。 〈開成〉  
I studied for about half an hour ..... school.
- (8) 窓をあけてくださいますか。 〈灘〉  
..... you mind ..... the window?
- \*  (9) 電話を拝借してもよろしいですか。  
Would you mind ..... your telephone?
- (10) 君はなぜわたしに言わずに外出したのか。 〈広島大学附属〉  
Why did you go out ..... ?
- (11) ほくたちは釣りや水泳を楽しんだものだった。 〈慶應義塾〉  
We would ..... or .....
- \*  (12) 彼はへいを塗り続けました。  
He ..... painting the wall.
- (13) 彼は自分ひとりで計画を実行することをあきらめた。 〈桐光学園〉  
He gave up ..... out his plan by .....
- (14) マイクは朝早く散歩するのが好きです。 〈修道〉  
Mike is ..... a walk early in the morning.
- \*  (15) 次に何が起るかはだれにもわからない。 〈愛光〉  
There is ..... what will happen next.
- (16) 彼は模型飛行機を作るのが上手なようです。  
He ..... be ..... model planes.

語句

(13) ...を実行する carry out ...

2 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1)a He is good at driving a car. (慶應義塾志木)  
b He ..... a car .....
- \*  (2)a I like swimming very much. (筑波大学附属)  
b I ..... very ..... of .....
- (3)a He didn't answer my question and went away. (青雲)  
b He went away ..... my question.
- (4)a Though it began to rain, they continued to play baseball.  
b Though it began to rain, they didn't ..... baseball.
- \*  (5)a I continued to ride a horse over an hour. (大妻中野)  
b I went on ..... a horse over an hour.
- (6)a At last he could find the treasure.  
b At last he succeeded in ..... the treasure.
- \*  (7)a It is a lot of fun to ride a bicycle. (関西学院)  
b ..... a bicycle ..... a lot of fun.
- \*  (8)a Will you please open the window?  
b Would you mind ..... the window?
- (9)a May I smoke here?  
b Do you mind my ..... here?
- (10)a Why don't you swim with us now? (修道)  
b How ..... with us now?
- (11)a He was proud that he was a musician.  
b He was proud of ..... a musician.
- (12)a My father usually doesn't wear glasses to read newspapers. (東京学芸大学附属)  
b My father usually reads newspapers ..... glasses.
- (13)a He went out of the room quietly. (大阪教育大学附属平野)  
b He went out of the room ..... a noise.
- (14)a It isn't easy to learn English. (高知学芸)  
b ..... is not easy.
- \*  (15)a The doctors failed to save the baby's life. (慶應義塾)  
b The doctors ..... succeed ..... the baby's life.
- (16)a The boys played soccer. They had a very good time. (土佐塾)  
b The boys ..... soccer very much.
- (17)a I listened to the radio before I went to bed. (大阪教育大学附属平野)  
b I went to bed ..... to the radio.
- \*  (18)a He could find her house easily. (愛光)  
b He had no ..... her house.

語句

(6) treasure 宝物 (11) proud 誇りに思っ て musician 音楽家 (15) save 救う

**3** 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、( ) 内の語句を並べかえなさい。

(1) よい英語を書くにはたくさんの練習が必要です。 (明治学院)  
Writing ( practice / a / English / lot / needs / of / good ).

\*  (2) 英語を話すときには間違ふことを恐れてはならない。 (巣鴨)  
Don't be ( making / in / of / mistakes / speaking / afraid ) English.

(3) わたしは文通している友達に、手紙を書くことに興味があるのです。 [1語不足] (法政大学第二)  
( interested / letters / pals / I / my / am / pen / to / writing ).

(4) あなたとテニスをするのを楽しみにしています。 [1語不足] (開成)  
( I'm / to / you / forward / tennis / looking / with ).

(5) パーティーに招いてくれてありがとう。 (筑波大学附属)  
( inviting / you / the / for / party / me / thank / to ).

(6) ちょっと辞書を貸していただけますか。 [1語不要] (学習院)  
( you / please / lending / would / me / mind / the dictionary / for a while )?

\*  (7) 仕事があつてデイビッドはその会合に出席できませんでした。 (明治大学付属明治)  
David's business ( kept / from / attending / him / the meeting ).

(8) わたしはあなたに2, 3時間でその本を読み終えてほしいと思います。 (早稲田実業)  
( in / reading / book / you / want / to / finish / few / a / I / the / hours ).

語句 (7) …に出席する attend …

**4** 次の日本語を英語に直しなさい。

(1) テレビを見るのをやめなさい。 (東京学芸大学附属)

\*  (2) その本を2日で読み終えたそうですね。 (桐蔭学園)

(3) 君は辞書を使わないでその文の意味がわかりますか。 [withoutを使って] (函館ラ・サール)

(4) ぼくは手紙を書くのが苦手なので、今晚電話で彼にお礼を言うつもりだ。 (灘)

語句 (2) …そうですね。 I hear …, (3) 文 sentence

## 動名詞を含む連語

- ① **be[get] used to ~ing**  
I am not used to getting up early.
- ② **cannot help ~ing**  
I could not help laughing at him.
- ③ **fail in ~ing**  
He failed in crossing the river.
- ④ **feel like ~ing**  
I feel like taking a walk.
- ⑤ **go[keep] on ~ing**  
He went on speaking for two hours.
- ⑥ **have difficulty (in) ~ing**  
I have difficulty in speaking English.
- ⑦ **How about ~ing?**  
How about going fishing this afternoon?
- ⑧ **insist on ~ing**  
He insisted on doing it.
- ⑨ **look forward to ~ing**  
I am looking forward to seeing you.
- ⑩ **never ... without ~ing**  
She never speaks without telling a lie.
- ⑪ **no use ~ing**  
It is no use crying over spilt milk.
- ⑫ **on ~ing**  
On arriving at the station, I called her.
- ⑬ **prevent[keep] ... from ~ing**  
The heavy snow prevented us from going out.  
It is difficult to keep the baby from crying.
- ⑭ **succeed in ~ing**  
She succeeded in getting the money.
- ⑮ **thank you for ~ing**  
Thank you for inviting me to the dinner.
- ⑯ **there is no ~ing**  
There is no knowing the future.
- ⑰ **worth ~ing**  
It is worth trying.
- ① ~に慣れている [慣れる]  
わたしは早起きに慣れていません。
- ② ~せずにはいられない  
わたしは彼を笑わずにはいられませんでした。
- ③ ~に失敗する  
彼は川を渡るのに失敗しました。
- ④ ~したい気がする  
散歩をしたい気がします。
- ⑤ ~し続ける  
彼は2時間話し続けました。
- ⑥ ~することに苦労する  
わたしは英語を話すのに苦労しています。
- ⑦ ~してはどうですか。、 ~しましょう。  
きょうの午後、釣りに行かないか。
- ⑧ ~することを主張する  
彼はそれをやると言ってききませんでした。
- ⑨ ~するのを楽しみにして待つ  
あなたにお目にかかるのを楽しみにしています。
- ⑩ ...すると必ず~  
彼女はしゃべれば必ずうそをつきます。
- ⑪ ~しても役に立たない、無駄だ  
こぼれた牛乳を嘆いても無駄だ[覆水盆に返らず]。
- ⑫ ~するとすぐに  
駅に着くとすぐにわたしは彼女に電話をかけました。
- ⑬ ...が~するのを妨げる  
大雪でわたしたちは外出できませんでした。  
赤ん坊を泣かさずしておくのは難しいです。
- ⑭ ~することに成功する  
彼女はお金を得ることに成功しました。
- ⑮ ~してくれてありがとう  
わたしを夕食に招待してくれてありがとう。
- ⑯ ~することができない  
未来を知ることはできません。
- ⑰ ~する価値がある  
ためしてみる価値があります。

# 7 接続詞

## 従位[属]接続詞(節と節を主と従の関係で結びつける接続詞)

**注意** 節……主語と動詞の関係を含む単語の集まりで、他の文の一部になっているもの。従位接続詞を用いた文では、接続詞に導かれる節を従節[従位節/従属節]といい、名詞・形容詞・副詞のいずれかに相当する働きをする。また、従節に対するもう一方の節を主節という。

### 1 名詞節を導くもの

- ① **a** I think (**that**) he will come home soon.
- b** I thought (**that**) he would come home soon.
- ② I hope (**that**) it will be sunny tomorrow.
- ③ I'm afraid (**that**) it will be rainy tomorrow.
- ④ I don't know **whether**[**if**] he is still in Tokyo or not.

**注意** (i) 接続詞の that の省略……接続詞の that は省略することができる(①~③)。  
 (ii) 時制の一致……主節の動詞が過去形るときは、従位(名詞)節中の(助)動詞も過去形になる(① — **b**)。  
 (iii) that 節を従える形容詞……afraid, sure, certain などは that 節を従えることができる(③)。

### 2 副詞節を導くもの

#### **a** 《時》を表す節を導くもの

- ① **When** I was a child, I wanted to be a pilot.
- ② **While** I was in New York, I often went to the movies.
- ③ I often listen to music **as** I study.
- ④ I usually write in my diary **before** I go to bed.
- ⑤ Let's wait here **until**[**till**] he comes back.
- ⑥ It is[has been] three years **since** my father died.
- ⑦ **As soon as** I left home, it began to rain.

#### **b** 《条件》を表す節を導くもの

If it rains tomorrow, I will stay home and read books.

**注意** 《時》や《条件》を表す副詞節中は、未来の内容も現在形で表す(**a** — ⑤, **b**)。

(×) If it will rain tomorrow, I will stay home and read books.

#### **c** 《理由》を表す節を導くもの

- ① I was late for school **because** I got up late this morning.
- ② **As** she is honest, everybody loves her.

#### **d** 《譲歩》を表す節を導くもの

**Though**[**Although**] he was rich, he was not so happy.

#### **e** 《様態》を表す節を導くもの

Do it **as** they do.

**f** 《結果》を表す節を導くもの(so ... that ~ 「とても…なので~だ」)

- ① He was **so** tired **that** he went to bed early.
- ② I was **so** busy **that** I could not go for a walk.

**g** 《目的》を表す節を導くもの(so[*in order*] that — may[*can*] ~ 「— が~できるように」)

I'll give you a key **so that** you **may[can]** use the computer anytime.

## 等位接続詞(語, 句, 節を対等の関係で結びつける接続詞)

**注意** 句…… まとまった意味を表す2語以上の単語の集まりで, その中に主語と動詞の関係を含まないもの。

### 1 and, but, or, so など

- ① Tom **and** Ken are good friends.
- ② Do you go to school on foot **or** by bus?
- ③ It was raining, **but** we played baseball.
- ④ It was raining, **so** we did not go on a picnic.

**注意** 《命令文…, and ~.》「…しなさい, そうすれば~。」  
《命令文…, or ~.》「…しなさい, さもないと~。」

### 2 相関接続詞など

- ① **not** A **but** B 「AではなくB」  
Kuro is **not** a pet **but** a friend.
- ② **either** A **or** B 「AかBのどちらか」  
**Either** you **or** I will have to do the work.
- ③ **neither** A **nor** B 「AもBも…ない」  
I can speak **neither** English **nor** French.
- ④ **both** A **and** B 「AもBも両方とも」  
My father can speak **both** English **and** French.
- ⑤ **not only** A **but (also)** B 「AだけでなくBも」  
My father can speak **not only** English **but (also)** French.
- ⑥ A **as well as** B 「Bと同様Aも」  
John can speak French **as well as** English.

**注意** 主語と動詞の一致

not A but B	Bに一致	Not you but I <b>am</b> wrong.
either A or B	Bに一致	Either he or I <b>am</b> wrong.
neither A nor B	Bに一致	Neither he nor I <b>am</b> wrong.
both A and B	複数扱い	Both he and I <b>are</b> wrong.
not only A but (also) B	Bに一致	Not only he but (also) I <b>am</b> wrong.
A as well as B	Aに一致	He as well as I <b>is</b> wrong.

## 練成問題

**1** 次の( )に入る最も適当な語(句)をそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

- \*  (1) I'll go fishing ( ) it is sunny tomorrow.  
 ア though イ if ウ but [ ]
- \*  (2) ( ) I was leaving home, it began to rain.  
 ア Because イ When ウ If [ ]
- (3) I must finish my homework ( ) I go to bed.  
 ア until イ before ウ while [ ]
- \*  (4) Please wait here ( ) my mother comes back.  
 ア before イ but ウ until エ that [ ]
- (5) ( ) he is more than sixty years old, he looks young.  
 ア Though イ Before ウ As [ ]
- \*  (6) ( ) I had no money with me, I didn't buy it.  
 ア Though イ After ウ As [ ]
- \*  (7) I learned English ( ) I was in London.  
 ア during イ while ウ that [ ]
- (8) He asked me ( ) I liked sports or not.  
 ア whether イ that ウ either エ neither [ ]
- (9) I am so busy ( ) I cannot help you.  
 ア as イ for ウ until エ that [ ]
- \*  (10) My sister is so young ( ) she cannot go there alone.  
 ア that イ what ウ as エ why [ ]
- \*  (11) Study hard so ( ) you may enter the college.  
 ア as イ much ウ because エ that [ ]
- (12) Tom speaks Japanese well, ( ) he can't read it.  
 ア but イ or ウ for エ because [ ]
- (13) It began to rain, ( ) we stopped going for a walk.  
 ア but イ if ウ because エ so [ ]
- \*  (14) Hurry up, ( ) you won't be able to catch the train.  
 ア and イ or ウ but [ ]
- \*  (15) This bicycle isn't mine ( ) his.  
 ア and イ but ウ for [ ]
- \*  (16) Either you ( ) he has to take care of the dog.  
 ア and イ or ウ but [ ]
- \*  (17) Neither my father ( ) mother is home now.  
 ア or イ and ウ but エ nor [ ]

語句

(11) enter ... [学校など] に入る

2 《時制の一致》次の文の下線部の動詞を過去形にして全文を書き直しなさい。

\*  (1) Everyone knows Bob is an honest boy.

(2) My brother says that he wants to be a doctor.

(3) I think he will pass the examination.

\*  (4) Our teacher teaches us that light travels faster than sound.

**注意** (4) 時制の一致の例外(=従属節で述べていることが、現在の事実・習慣、不変の真理、歴史上の事実などの場合は時制の一致の法則に従わない)。

3 次の英文の書き出しに続けるのに最も適当な語句をあとからそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

\*  (1) Unless more than ten people are against the plan, [ ]

(2) If it is rainy tomorrow, [ ]

(3) Mike had a lot of things to do, [ ]

(4) Though Mike was very tired, [ ]

(5) I don't know [ ]

(6) As he often tells lies, [ ]

ア so he forgot to mail the letter.

イ he had to work until late.

ウ we don't like him.

エ he won't change his mind.

オ whether he is still at home or not.

カ he'll stop going on a picnic.

語句

(1) unless = if ... not (6) tell a lie うそをつく

4 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、\_\_\_\_\_に適する語を書きなさい。

\*  (1) a Tom studied, and then he went out for a walk.

b \_\_\_\_\_ Tom went out for a walk, he studied.

\*  (2) a If you work hard, you will succeed.

b Work hard, \_\_\_\_\_ you will succeed.

(3) a If you do not study hard, you will fail the examination.

b Study hard, \_\_\_\_\_ you will fail the examination.

\*  (4) a He had a lot of things to do, but he went to the movies.

b \_\_\_\_\_ he had a lot of things to do, he went to the movies.

〈慶應義塾〉

(5) a You may make mistakes in speaking English.

b You may make mistakes \_\_\_\_\_ you \_\_\_\_\_ English.

語句

(2) succeed 成功する (3) fail (in) ... ...に失敗する

## 発展問題

**1** 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) 忘れないうちに彼の電話番号を書き留めなさい。 〈土佐塾〉  
Write down his phone number ..... you forget.
- (2) 雨がひどく降っていたけれども、彼は外出しました。  
..... raining hard, he went out.
- \*  (3) 彼女は英語とフランス語の両方を話せます。  
She can speak ..... English ..... French.
- \*  (4) 彼が家を出るとすぐに雨が降りだしました。  
..... he ..... his house, it began to rain.
- \*  (5) わたしは彼か彼の弟のどちらかに会いに来てもらいたい。 〈成城学園〉  
I hope that ..... he ..... his brother will come to see me.
- (6) 彼が死んでから10年になります。  
It is ten years ..... he died.
- \*  (7) わたしが話している間、彼女は何も言いませんでした。  
..... I was speaking, she said nothing.
- \*  (8) 彼の家にはテレビだけでなくラジオもないそうです。  
I hear his family has no radio as ..... as ..... television.
- \*  (9) あすは雨になるのではないかと思います。  
I ..... rain tomorrow.
- (10) 秋は勉強だけでなく運動にも適しています。  
Autumn is suitable ..... for studying but also for taking exercise.
- (11) その本を読みたいと彼女が言いました。  
She said that she ..... read the book.
- (12) 彼がきょうの午後來るかどうかわかりません。  
I don't know ..... this afternoon.
- \*  (13) 起きなさい、さもないと始発に間に合わないよ。 〈桐光学園〉  
Get up, ..... you won't be in ..... for the first train.
- \*  (14) まもなくわたしたちが月へ旅行できるときがくるだろう。 〈昭和学院秀英〉  
It will not be long ..... we can travel to the moon.
- \*  (15) 彼が帰ってくるまでここで待ちましょう。 〈日本大学〉  
Let's wait here ..... he ..... back.
- (16) 風呂に入っていると電話が鳴った。 〈青雲〉  
I was ..... a bath ..... the phone rang.
- (17) あなたもわたしも15歳です。 〈文教大学付属〉  
Both you ..... I ..... fifteen years old.

**語句**

(10) be suitable for ... ..に適している    take exercise 運動する

2 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1)(a) We began to play baseball soon after school. 〈日本大学第三〉  
    (b) As ..... as school was ....., we began to play baseball.
- (2)(a) Nancy cooks well. Mary cooks well, too. 〈東大谷〉  
    (b) ..... Nancy ..... Mary cook well.
- \*  (3)(a) As it was raining hard, they didn't go out. 〈成城学園〉  
    (b) It was raining ..... hard ..... they didn't go out.
- (4)(a) He came to Osaka at the age of eighteen. 〈大谷〉  
    (b) He came to Osaka ..... he ..... eighteen.
- (5)(a) During my stay in Japan I'd like to go and see *sumo*.  
    (b) ..... I am staying in Japan, I'd like to go and see *sumo*.
- \*  (6)(a) Without your help, we won't be able to do the work. 〈愛光〉  
    (b) ....., we won't be able to do the work.
- (7)(a) You must not appear unless I call.  
    (b) You must not appear ..... I ..... call.
- \*  (8)(a) He ran to school in order to be in time for class. 〈慶應義塾〉  
    (b) He ran to school ..... he ..... want to be late ..... class.
- \*  (9)(a) She was sleepy, but she studied English last night. 〈東洋大学附属牛久〉  
    (b) ..... she was sleepy, she studied English last night.
- \*  (10)(a) She can't play the piano, and she can't play the violin, either. 〈郁文館〉  
    (b) She can play ..... the piano ..... the violin.
- (11)(a) I came to England five years ago. 〈慶應義塾〉  
    (b) It is five years since .....
- (12)(a) I promise not to be late for school. 〈城北〉  
    (b) I promise that ..... be late for school.
- \*  (13)(a) He gave me money as well as advice. 〈土佐〉  
    (b) He gave me ..... advice but also money.
- (14)(a) You'll fail the exam unless you work hard. 〈城北〉  
    (b) ....., ..... you will fail the exam.
- (15)(a) She never goes out without a hat. 〈関西学院〉  
    (b) She ..... wears a hat ..... she goes out.
- (16)(a) Wash your hands before having a meal.  
    (b) You must wash your hands before ..... a meal.
- (17)(a) He was sad to see the dead bird. 〈大阪教育大学附属平野〉  
    (b) He was sad ..... the dead bird.

語句

(4) at the age of ... ..歳のときに (7) appear 現れる, 姿を見せる  
(12) promise 約束する (16) meal 食事

3 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、( )内の語句を並べかえなさい。

- (1) 母はたいへん忙しいので、わたしたちと一緒に行けません。 〈日本大学〉  
My mother ( go / busy / can't / is / with us / that / so / she ).  
-----
- (2) ずっと走って行けば、終電に間に合います。〔1語不要〕 〈海城〉  
( will / all / time / if / running / for / the / way / you / in / keep / be / and ) the last train.  
-----
- \*  (3) 彼が成功するかどうかは、彼の努力しだいです。〔1語不足〕 〈開成〉  
( efforts / not / whether / his / will / or / on / succeed / he ).  
-----

語句

(2) ~し続ける keep ~ing    ずっと all the way    (3) 努力 effort    …しだいである depend on …

**注意** (3) 接続詞に導かれる名詞節が主語になる。

4 次の日本語を英語に直しなさい。

- (1) けさわたしが起きると、雪が激しく降っていました。 〈慶應義塾〉  
-----
- (2) あなたかわたしのどちらかが間違っています。  
-----
- (3) 彼はあまりにもびっくりしたので、一言もいえなかった。 〈修道〉  
-----
- (4) 彼は医者であるばかりでなく音楽家でもあります。  
-----
- (5) 先週の水曜日、わたしはたいへん忙しかったので彼に会えませんでした。 〈同志社〉  
-----
- (6) もし今出発すれば、わたしたちはその列車に間に合うでしょう。  
-----
- (7) 駅に着いたらすぐにわたしに電話をください。  
-----
- \*  (8) 母が亡くなってから10年になります。 〈海城〉  
-----
- \*  (9) わたしは始発列車に間に合うように早く起きました。  
-----
- (10) 彼だけでなく彼の両親もテニスがうまい。  
-----
- (11) 彼女は少し熱があったが学校へ行きました。  
-----

語句

(11) (少し)熱がある have a (slight) fever

## 接続詞を含む連語

- ① **as far as** ~  
Walk as far as the station and take a taxi.  
As far as I know, he is honest.
- ② **as for** ~  
As for me, I don't like him.
- ③ **as soon as** ~  
As soon as he saw me, he ran away.
- ④ **A as well as B**  
He speaks German as well as French.
- ⑤ **because of** ~  
We didn't go out because of the rain.
- ⑥ **both A and B**  
He speaks both French and German.
- ⑦ **either A or B**  
Either you or he has to go.
- ⑧ **even if ~ = even though ~**  
He will come here even if it rains.
- ⑨ **hardly ~ when ...**  
I had hardly left home when it began to rain.
- ⑩ **It goes without saying that** ~.  
It goes without saying that health is important.
- ⑪ **It will not be long before** ~.  
It will not be long before she gets well.
- ⑫ **neither A nor B**  
He speaks neither French nor German.
- ⑬ **not A but B**  
He is not a doctor but a teacher.
- ⑭ **not only A but (also) B**  
Not only you but (also) he is wrong.
- ⑮ **now (that)** ~  
Now that you're a high school student, you must study harder.
- ⑯ **so ... that** ~  
It was so hot that I could not sleep.
- ⑰ **so[in order] that — may[can] ~**  
Talk louder so that he can hear you.
- ⑱ **It seems (that) ...**  
It seems that he is rich.
- ① ~まで / ~の限りでは  
駅まで歩いてタクシーに乗りなさい。  
わたしの知る限りでは彼は正直です。
- ② ~はどうかといえば(他はともかく)  
わたしはどうかといえば、彼が嫌いです。
- ③ ~するとすぐに  
彼はわたしを見るやいなや逃げ出しました。
- ④ Bと同様 Aも  
彼はフランス語と同様にドイツ語も話します。
- ⑤ ~のために, ~が原因で  
わたしたちは雨のために外出しませんでした。
- ⑥ Aも Bも両方とも  
彼はフランス語もドイツ語も話します。
- ⑦ AかBのどちらか  
君か彼のどちらかが行かなければなりません。
- ⑧ たとえ~でも  
たとえ雨が降っても彼はここへ来るだろう。
- ⑨ ~するかしないうちに...  
わたしが家を出るか出ないうちに雨が降り出しました。
- ⑩ ~は言うまでもない。  
健康が大切であることは言うまでもありません。
- ⑪ まもなく~。  
まもなく彼女はよくなるでしょう。
- ⑫ Aも Bも...ない  
彼はフランス語もドイツ語も話しません。
- ⑬ Aではなく B  
彼は医者ではなくて教師です。
- ⑭ Aだけでなく Bも  
君だけでなく彼も間違っています。
- ⑮ もう~だから, ~であるからには  
あなたはもう高校生なのだから, もっと一生懸命勉強しなければいけません。
- ⑯ とても...なので~だ  
とても暑かったので眠れませんでした。
- ⑰ ~が~できるように  
彼に聞こえるようにもっと大きな声で話さない。
- ⑱ ...であるようだ。  
彼は金持ちのようです。

# 8 文型

## 文の主要素

**注意** 文の要素……主語(S)、動詞(V)、目的語(O)、補語(C)の4つを〈文の主要素〉という。それぞれの主要素に付加される修飾語句を文の従要素と呼ぶ。(S=Subject V=Verb O=Object C=Complement)

### 1 主語「…は[が]」

主語になるのは名詞、代名詞が最もふつうだが、そのほかに名詞の働きをする語句(名詞相当語句)が主語になることもある。

- ① **Japan** has a lot of beautiful rivers. [名詞]
- ② **He** likes playing baseball. [代名詞]
- ③ **To walk** is good for the health. [不定詞]

### 2 動詞

動詞は、主語の動作・状態などを述べる語で、文はその使われる動詞によってその文型が決まる。ただし、同一の動詞でも複数の用法があり、異なった文型で使われるものがある。

### 3 目的語「…を, …に」

動詞の表す動作・行為の対象を示す語。主語と同様に名詞、代名詞(目的格)が目的語になるが、その他の名詞相当語句が目的語になる場合がある。「～を」にあたる語を**直接目的語**、「～に」にあたる語を**間接目的語**という。

- ① I need **a dictionary**. [名詞]
- ② He finished **reading the book**. [動名詞]
- ③ I don't know **what to do**. [疑問詞+不定詞]
- ④ I hope **that I'll see you again**. [that 節]
- ⑤ She gave me **a glass of water**. (直接目的語=a glass of water, 間接目的語=me)

### 4 補語

主語または目的語について、それが何なのか、あるいはどんな性質・状態なのかを表し、動詞(述部)の意味を完成させる語。名詞、代名詞、形容詞が補語になるが、その他に名詞相当語句、形容詞相当語句が補語になる場合がある。主語についての叙述を補うものを**主格補語**、目的語の叙述を補うものを**目的格補語**という。

- ① She is **happy**. (She=happy) [主格補語]
- ② He made her **happy**. (her=happy) [目的格補語]

**注意** ①、②では、happy という語がなければ主語(She)、目的語(her)についてどんな状態なのかが確定せず、文の意味が完成しない。すなわち happy が補語である。

## 5つの文型

**注意** 文型……英語の文は、その主要素による構成の仕方によって5つの型に分類することができる。修飾語句は文型の分類には関係しない。

### 1 第1文型(SV)

- ① Birds fly in the sky.  
S V 修飾語句
- ② There is a book on the desk.  
V S 修飾語句

**注意** There is[are] …の構文では、主語と動詞が倒置されている(②)。

### 2 第2文型(SVC)

He was a teacher ten years ago.  
S V C 修飾語句

**注意** (i) 第2文型では、S=Cの関係が成り立つ。

(ii) 第2文型をとる主な動詞……be動詞, look(…に見える), become / get / grow / turn(…になる), sound(…に聞こえる)など。

### 3 第3文型(SVO)

I like sports very much.  
S V O 修飾語句

### 4 第4文型(SVOO)

My uncle gave me a camera. (= My uncle gave a camera to me.)  
S V O O

**注意** 第4文型は、前置詞を用いて第3文型に書きかえることができる。

(i) to を用いて書きかえられる主な動詞……give, send, teach, show, read, lend など。

(ii) for を用いて書きかえられる主な動詞……make, buy, cook, find, sing など。

### 5 第5文型(SVOC)

- ① He made his son a doctor.  
S V O C
- ② I found it difficult to write a letter in English.  
S V O C (真の目的語)

**注意** (i) 第5文型ではO=Cの関係が成り立つ。

(ii) 第5文型をとる主な動詞……make(～を…にする), call(～を…と呼ぶ), name(～を…と名づける), keep / leave(～を…にしておく), find(～が…とわかる), think(～を…と思う)など。

(iii) ②の it は形式[仮]目的語と呼ばれるもので、真の目的語である to 不定詞以下の代わりをしている。

## 練成問題

**1** 次の文を1～5の文型に分類しなさい。

- |                          |                                                     |          |    |
|--------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------|----------|----|
| <input type="checkbox"/> | (1) My sister became a nurse.                       | 第 [    ] | 文型 |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | (2) Will you please tell me the way to the station? | 第 [    ] | 文型 |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | (3) These trees grow quickly.                       | 第 [    ] | 文型 |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | (4) I did my homework after dinner.                 | 第 [    ] | 文型 |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | (5) The people in London call the clock Big Ben.    | 第 [    ] | 文型 |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | (6) I don't want to eat anything.                   | 第 [    ] | 文型 |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | (7) I'll send you some pictures of my family.       | 第 [    ] | 文型 |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | (8) There was an old house near my house.           | 第 [    ] | 文型 |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | (9) I made my mother angry.                         | 第 [    ] | 文型 |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | (10) She will get well soon.                        | 第 [    ] | 文型 |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | (11) She had a baby on her back.                    | 第 [    ] | 文型 |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | (12) I lived in Kyoto three years ago.              | 第 [    ] | 文型 |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | (13) My father bought me a CD yesterday.            | 第 [    ] | 文型 |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | (14) The leaves turned yellow.                      | 第 [    ] | 文型 |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | (15) They named the black dog Kuro.                 | 第 [    ] | 文型 |

**2** 次の(    )に入る最も適当な語(句)をそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

- |                          |                                                                 |           |
|--------------------------|-----------------------------------------------------------------|-----------|
| <input type="checkbox"/> | (1) He looked quite (    ).                                     | 〈海城〉      |
|                          | ア angry    イ angrily    ウ anger                                 | [    ]    |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | (2) Her story doesn't sound (    ).                             | 〈浦和明の星女子〉 |
|                          | ア reality    イ real    ウ really    エ realize                    | [    ]    |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | (3) Don't make noise. Keep (    ).                              | [    ]    |
|                          | ア quiet    イ to quiet    ウ quietly                              | [    ]    |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | (4) My aunt sent a present (    ) me.                           | [    ]    |
|                          | ア to    イ for    ウ at    エ in                                   | [    ]    |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | (5) He gave an interesting book (    ) his son.                 | [    ]    |
|                          | ア for    イ to    ウ at    エ by                                   | [    ]    |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | (6) Frank lent a computer game (    ) Mike.                     | [    ]    |
|                          | ア to    イ for    ウ of                                           | [    ]    |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | (7) My father bought (    ).                                    | 〈弘学館〉     |
|                          | ア a book me    イ for me a book    ウ me a book    エ a book to me | [    ]    |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | (8) We thought the girl (    ).                                 | [    ]    |
|                          | ア kindly    イ kindness    ウ kind                                | [    ]    |
| <input type="checkbox"/> | (9) I got home very late. That (    ) my mother angry.          | 〈国学院大学栃木〉 |
|                          | ア went    イ was    ウ did    エ made                              | [    ]    |

3 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- \*  (1) この町かどにはかつて病院がありました。  
..... be a hospital at the corner of this street.
- \*  (2) 彼はきのうとても疲れているようでした。 (郁文館)  
He ..... so ..... yesterday.
- \*  (3) その村にはバスに1時間ほど乗れば行ける。 (灘)  
About an hour's bus ..... will ..... you to the village.
- (4) グリーン先生はわたしたちに英語を教えています。  
Mr. Green .....
- \*  (5) メアリーは先月わたしに1通のおもしろい手紙を送ってくれました。  
Mary ..... last month.
- (6) その知らせを聞いてわたしはうれしくなりました。 (修道)  
The news ..... happy.
- \*  (7) わたしたちの町はその温泉で有名になりました。  
The hot spring .....
- \*  (8) わたしたちはそうするのが簡単であるとわかりました。 (昭和学院秀英)  
We found ..... to do so.

語句

(7) 温泉 hot spring

4 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) (a) This large dictionary is mine. (関西大学第一)  
(b) This large dictionary ..... me.
- (2) (a) There were a lot of beautiful scenes in Japan in those days.  
(b) ..... a lot of beautiful scenes in those days.
- \*  (3) (a) Our city ..... two colleges.  
(b) ..... are two colleges in our city.
- \*  (4) (a) Mr. Brown was my teacher of French. (日本大学)  
(b) Mr. Brown ..... French.
- \*  (5) (a) We had a lot of rain this summer. (日本大学)  
(b) ..... a lot this summer.
- \*  (6) (a) My mother made me a cup of tea.  
(b) My mother made a cup of tea .....
- (7) (a) My aunt bought me a beautiful dress. (立命館)  
(b) My aunt bought a beautiful dress ..... me.
- (8) (a) He got angry at her words. (関西学院)  
(b) Her words ..... angry.

語句

(2) scene 風景 (4) French フランス語

# 発展問題

1 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1)① What is this flower called in English? (同志社)  
 ② What do ..... this flower in English?
- \*  (2)① Why was she so happy? (桐朋)  
 ② ..... her so happy?
- (3)① He became famous for the discovery. (修道)  
 ② The discovery ..... famous.
- (4)① He was sad to hear the news. (芝浦工大附属)  
 ② The news .....
- (5)① He was late because there was a train accident. (慶應義塾)  
 ② A train accident ..... him late.
- (6)① It's half an hour's drive to the market. (成城)  
 ② It ..... half an hour to go to the market by car.
- \*  (7)① I thought that he was kind. (芝浦工大附属)  
 ② I thought ..... kind.
- \*  (8)① It snows a lot here in winter. (大阪教育大学附属平野)  
 ② We ..... here in winter.
- (9)① We have had no rain for two weeks. (修道)  
 ② ..... rained for two weeks.
- (10)① My brother is good at playing the guitar. (法政大第二)  
 ② My brother is a .....
- \*  (11)① Does your mother cook well? (滝)  
 ② Is your mother a ..... ?
- (12)① My wife doesn't get up early in the morning. (開成)  
 ② My wife isn't an .....
- \*  (13)① When I saw Mr. Tanaka this morning, I thought he was very happy. (東京工業大学附属)  
 ② Mr. Tanaka ..... very happy this morning.
- (14)① How can I get to the library?  
 ② Could you ..... me the ..... to the library?
- \*  (15)① Can I borrow your dictionary? (清風南海)  
 ② Will you ..... your dictionary?
- (16)① A lot of people visited our school last year. (土佐塾)  
 ② We had a lot of ..... to our school last year.
- ▶  (17)① She cried when she heard the sad news. (愛光)  
 ② The sad news brought ..... to her eyes.

語句

(3) discovery 発見 (5) accident 事故

**2** 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、( )内の語句を並べかえなさい。

- (1) ルーシーはドアのそばにあるかさを彼女に貸しました。 (関西学院)  
( the / the / beside / umbrella / door / lent / Lucy / her ).
- .....
- (2) 何か冷たい飲みものを持ってきてあげましょうか。  
( I / you / bring / cold / to / drink / shall / something )?
- .....
- (3) メアリーは彼女のお父さんに音楽会の切符を渡しました。  
( Mary / the concert / handed / for / her / father / a ticket ).
- .....
- \*  (4) その老人はいつも公園をきれいにしている。 [1語不要] (東明館)  
( clean / man / always / keeps / the old / is / the park ).
- .....
- (5) 彼が試験に合格したので両親はとても喜んだ。 (開成)  
( happy / made / in / his / very / his / examination / parents / success / the ).
- .....
- (6) それはおじからわたしへの誕生日のプレゼントでした。 (国立工業高専)  
My uncle ( to / it / gave / for / my / me ) birthday present.
- .....
- (7) その本を読んだら、思っていたよりもずっと難しかった。 (郁文館)  
( the book / found / difficult / I / more / much ).
- .....
- \*  (8) この本を読んだおかげで、イングランドの生活がいくらかわかった。 (甲陽学院)  
( idea / England / some / life / this / gave / of / book / in / me ).
- .....
- (9) 飛行機は鉄道や船に比べて、地球をせまくするのにはるかに大きく貢献してきた。 (海城)  
Planes ( a / and ships / done / have / make / much more / smaller / than / the earth / trains / to ) place.

**3** 次の日本語を英語に直しなさい。

- \*  (1) この動物は英語で何と呼びますか。
- .....
- (2) ドアを開けたままにしておきなさい。
- .....
- (3) いつも手を清潔にしておきなさい。
- .....

# 9 受動態

## 受動態の形

**注意** 態……態には、能動態と受動態があり、能動態は主語が動作を行う関係「…が～する」を、受動態は主語が動作を受ける関係「…が～される」を表す。動詞の性質から見ると、受動態を作るのは目的語をとる動詞で、目的語をとらない動詞は受動態を作ることはできない。

**a** 現在・過去……《am[is / are / was / were] + 過去分詞》

Mike opens the window.

→ The window **is opened** by Mike.

**b** 未来……《will be + 過去分詞》

They will build a new library next year.

→ A new library **will be built** (by them) next year.

**c** 現在完了……《have[has] + been + 過去分詞》

He has finished the work.

→ The work **has been finished** by him.

**d** 進行形……《be being + 過去分詞》

She was opening the door.

→ The door **was being opened** by her.

**注意** (i) 助動詞(will, can, must など)を含む文を受動態にする場合は、《助動詞 + be + 過去分詞》とする**(b)**。

(ii) 行為者が they, we, people のような〈一般の人〉、〈不特定多数の人〉の場合は by …を省略するのがふつう**(b)**は文脈上、両方考えられる。一方、受動態で by …によって行為者が示されていない文を能動態にする場合は、適当な主語を補う必要がある。

English and French are spoken in Canada.

→ **They** speak English and French in Canada. (they は、一般的な「人々」の意味)

## 第4文型・第5文型の受動態

**a** 第4文型(SVOO)の受動態……2つの目的語をそれぞれ主語にした2通りの受動態の文ができる。

Mr. Davis teaches us English. (O = us, English)

→ ① **We** are taught English by Mr. Davis.

→ ② **English** is taught (to) us by Mr. Davis.

**注意** (i) 間接目的語(おもに《人》を表す)を主語にするほうが自然な文になることが多い(①)。

(ii) 直接目的語(おもに《物》を表す)を主語にする場合、前置詞 to や for が置かれることが多い(②)。

**b** 第5文型(SVOC)の受動態……目的語を主語にした受動態の文ができる。

They called me Ken. (O = me, C = Ken)

→ **I** was called Ken by them.

## 受動態の疑問文・否定文

- a** 現在・過去 …… 疑問文は am[is / are / was / were] を主語の前に出す。否定文は am[is / are / was / were] のあとに not を置く。
- ① Is the window **opened** by Mike? — Yes, it **is**. / No, it **isn't**.
  - ② The window **is not**[isn't] **opened** by Mike.
- b** 未来 …… 疑問文は will を主語の前に出す。否定文は will のあとに not を置く。
- ① Will a new library **be built** next year? — Yes, it **will**. / No, it **won't**.
  - ② A new library **will not**[won't] **be built** next year.
- c** 現在完了 …… 疑問文は have[has] を主語の前に出す。否定文は have[has] のあとに not を置く。
- ① Has the work **been finished** by him? — Yes, it **has**. / No, it **hasn't**.
  - ② The work **has not**[hasn't] **been finished** by him (yet).
- d** 進行形 …… 疑問文は am[is / are / was / were] を主語の前に出す。否定文は am [is / are / was / were] のあとに not を置く。
- ① Was the door **being opened** by her? — Yes, it **was**. / No, it **wasn't**.
  - ② The door **was not**[wasn't] **being opened** by her.

**注意** (i) 助動詞を含む受動態の場合、疑問文は助動詞を主語の前に出し、否定文は助動詞のあとに not を置く (b)。

## 注意すべき受動態

- a** 疑問詞で始まる受動態
- ① Who wrote this book? [疑問詞が主語]  
→ **Who** was this book written **by**? (= **By whom** was this book written?)
  - ② What did he break? [疑問詞が目的語]  
→ **What** was broken by him?
  - ③ What do you call this flower? [疑問詞が補語]  
→ **What** is this flower called?
- b** 《動詞＋前置詞》、《動詞＋名詞＋前置詞》の受動態 …… 前置詞を残す。  
He laughed at me.  
→ I was laughed **at** by him.
- c** by 以外の前置詞を伴う受動態  
be covered with … 「…で覆われている」、be filled with … 「…でいっぱいである」、be interested in … 「…に興味がある」、be known to … 「…に知られている」、be made from … 「[原料] から作られる」、be made of … 「[材料] でできている」、be pleased with … 「…に喜ぶ」、be satisfied with … 「…に満足する」、be surprised at … 「…に驚く」など。
- d** be born 「生まれる」  
He was born in 1974.

## 練 成 問 題

**1** 次の( )に入る最も適当な語(句)をそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

- (1) This dictionary is ( ) by many students.  
ア use イ used ウ to use エ using [ ]
- (2) The picture was ( ) by Taro.  
ア draw イ draws ウ drew エ drawn オ drawing [ ]
- (3) English is ( ) in America.  
ア speaking イ spoken ウ to speak エ spoke [ ]
- (4) I ( ) to make a speech by the teacher. (城北埼玉)  
ア am asking イ have asked ウ was asked エ will ask [ ]
- (5) The answers ( ) in ink only. (学習院)  
ア must write イ must be writing ウ must be written エ must wrote [ ]
- (6) These rooms are always ( ) clean.  
ア keep イ keeping ウ kept エ to keep [ ]
- (7) ( ) English spoken in Australia?  
ア Is イ Are ウ Does エ Has [ ]
- (8) What ( ) this airplane called? (明治学院)  
ア do イ does ウ is エ does have [ ]
- \* (9) I was laughed ( ) by her. (京華)  
ア on イ in ウ at エ from [ ]
- (10) Soseki Natsume is known ( ) everyone.  
ア by イ with ウ to エ as [ ]
- \* (11) I am not satisfied ( ) the result of the test. (青雲)  
ア for イ in ウ to エ with [ ]
- \* (12) Your father will be ( ) the news. (明治学院)  
ア surprised イ surprise at ウ surprised at エ surprising at [ ]

**2** 次の.....に、あとの( )内の語を適当な形に直して書きなさい。ただし、2語になる場合もあります。

- (1) English is ..... in many parts of the world. ( use )
- (2) A new kind of stamp was ..... today. ( sell )
- (3) A few birds were ..... in the garden. ( see )
- (4) You will be ..... to the airport by this bus. ( take ) (日本大学第三)
- \* (5) Happiness cannot ..... with money. ( buy ) (関西学院)
- (6) What is this flower ..... in English? ( call )
- (7) When was this letter ..... by him? ( write )
- \* (8) I ..... at the news last night. ( surprise ) (日本大学)

3 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1)(a) Every student likes Miss Yamada.  
(b) Miss Yamada ..... liked ..... every student.
- \*  (2)(a) Tomoko read a lot of books.  
(b) A lot of books ..... read by Tomoko.
- (3)(a) He will do the work tomorrow. (近畿大学附属)  
(b) The work ..... by him tomorrow.
- (4)(a) We can see lions at the zoo. (法政大学第二)  
(b) Lions ..... be ..... at the zoo.
- (5)(a) My uncle gave me some English books.  
(b) Some English books ..... to me by my uncle.
- \*  (6)(a) Mr. Green will teach you English next year.  
(b) English ..... you by Mr. Green next year.
- (7)(a) We named the ship the Mayflower. (郁文館)  
(b) The ship ..... the Mayflower.
- (8)(a) You must not leave the door open. (清風南海)  
(b) The door must not .....
- (9)(a) Did your five-year-old son draw this picture? (成城学園)  
(b) ..... this picture ..... your five-year-old son?
- (10)(a) Was this letter written by Tom?  
(b) ..... Tom ..... this letter?
- (11)(a) I wasn't helped by my sister.  
(b) My sister ..... help .....
- (12)(a) Is Spanish spoken in Brazil? (お茶の水女子大学附属)  
(b) ..... they ..... Spanish in Brazil?
- (13)(a) When did they build this ship?  
(b) When ..... this ship ..... ?
- (14)(a) When did they take these pictures? (大阪教育大学附属平野)  
(b) When ..... by them?
- \*  (15)(a) What is the book called in Japanese? (同志社国際)  
(b) What ..... the book in Japanese?
- (16)(a) The book interests me. (慶應義塾)  
(b) I am ..... the book.
- \*  (17)(a) Everybody knows Ichiro. (法政大学第一)  
(b) Ichiro is ..... everybody.
- \*  (18)(a) His success pleased everybody. (関西学院)  
(b) Everybody ..... his success.

語句

(7) the Mayflower メイフラワー号 (12) Spanish スペイン語 Brazil ブラジル

4 次の文を、能動態は受動態に、受動態は能動態に書きかえなさい。

\*  (1) Children use this book.

.....

\*  (2) Masao wrote these letters last year.

.....

(3) My sister made this dress.

.....

(4) She bought these oranges.

.....

(5) She shut the door slowly.

〈青山学院〉

.....

(6) My father took me to the zoo yesterday.

.....

(7) Everybody will love the song.

.....

(8) My mother will send you the package.

.....

(9) We can see Mt. Fuji from here.

.....

\*  (10) She always keeps the room clean.

.....

\*  (11) Jack has finished the work.

.....

(12) Did your father make this radio?

〈法政大学第二〉

.....

(13) When did John make this chair?

.....

(14) Why did the family invite Mr. Smith to dinner?

〈高知学芸〉

.....

(15) What do you call this bird in English?

.....

(16) He was introduced to us by our principal.

.....

(17) English is taught us by Mr. West.

.....

(18) What language is spoken in Canada?

〈高知学芸〉

.....

語句

(8) package 包み, 荷物 (16) principal 校長先生

5 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) その門はきのうからずっと閉められています。 〈開成〉  
The gate has ..... closed ..... yesterday.
- (2) 空には星がひとつも見えない。 〈四天王寺〉  
Not a star can ..... in the sky.
- \*  (3) 窓をこわしたのはだれですか。 〈上宮〉  
..... whom was the window broken?
- (4) だれでも彼のことをほめます。 〈青山学院〉  
He ..... well of by everybody.
- (5) 彼の名前は多くの人に知られています。 〈大阪女学院〉  
His name ..... many people.
- \*  (6) 富士山の頂上は雪で覆われています。 〈慶應義塾志木〉  
The top of Mt. Fuji ..... snow.
- (7) わたしたちはそのニュースに非常に驚いています。 〈慶應義塾志木〉  
We ..... the news.
- \*  (8) このかばんは革でできています。 〈甲陽学院〉  
This bag ..... leather.
- \*  (9) ミルクからバターが作られることは、だれでも知っている。 〈甲陽学院〉  
Everybody knows that milk is ..... butter.
- (10) 彼はとても親切な人だそうです。 〈学習院〉  
..... that he is a very kind man.

6 次の日本語を英語に直しなさい。ただし、受動態で表現しなさい。

- (1) この本は多くの学生に読まれています。  
.....
- (2) カナダでは英語とフランス語の両方が話されています。  
.....
- \*  (3) この机はおじがわたしにくれたものです。  
.....
- (4) 砂糖はあの店で売られていますか。  
.....
- (5) 彼はメアリーの誕生パーティーに招待されるでしょう。  
.....
- (6) この学校はいつ建てられましたか。  
.....
- \*  (7) ジョンは絵を描くことに興味を持っています。  
.....

# 発展問題

1 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- \*  (1) (a) Who wrote this book? 〈日本大学第三〉  
 (b) Who was this book ..... ?
- (2) (a) Who broke this window? 〈土佐塾〉  
 (b) ..... was this window broken .....
- (3) (a) Who directed this foreign film? 〈中央大学附属〉  
 (b) By ..... this foreign film directed?
- \*  (4) (a) Science cannot solve all the problems of life. 〈慶應義塾〉  
 (b) Some of the problems of life ..... by science.
- (5) (a) Is butter sold at that store?  
 (b) ..... butter at that store?
- (6) (a) Japanese must not be spoken in class. 〈関西学院〉  
 (b) ..... must not ..... Japanese in class.
- \*  (7) (a) Snow is covering Mt. Shirouma. 〈明治大学附属明治〉  
 (b) Mt. Shirouma is ..... snow.
- (8) (a) The news was a great surprise to me.  
 (b) I was greatly ..... the news.
- (9) (a) My son has to take care of the dog. 〈青雲〉  
 (b) The dog has to ..... care of by my son.
- (10) (a) Tom looked after the dogs while we were out. 〈慶應義塾〉  
 (b) The dogs ..... after ..... Tom while we were out.
- \*  (11) (a) A pretty girl spoke to me on the street. 〈成城〉  
 (b) I ..... by a pretty girl on the street.
- (12) (a) A bus ran over a dog on the street. 〈法政大学第一〉  
 (b) A dog ..... by a bus on the street.
- (13) (a) I want to be more famous in the world. 〈土佐塾〉  
 (b) I want to be better ..... in the world.
- \*  (14) (a) March 10 is my birthday.  
 (b) I was ..... March 10.
- (15) (a) The boy is ten years old. 〈近畿大学附属〉  
 (b) The boy was ..... ten years .....
- ▶  (16) (a) The game was canceled because of the heavy rain. 〈日本大学習志野〉  
 (b) The game was ..... off because of the heavy rain.
- ▶  (17) (a) They say that she is a very good cook. 〈お茶の水女子大学附属〉  
 (b) It is ..... that she is a very good cook.

語句

(3) direct ... ..を監督する foreign film 外国映画 (16) heavy rain 豪雨

2 次の文を、能動態は受動態に、受動態は能動態に書きかえなさい。

- (1) They don't sell this kind of car in America. 〈高知学芸〉  
.....
- \*  (2) The students elected him chairperson.  
.....
- (3) The boys laughed at me. 〈芝浦工大附属〉  
.....
- (4) He took care of the babies. 〈東明館〉  
.....
- (5) You must take off your shoes in this room. 〈関西大学第一〉  
.....
- \*  (6) Can you see Mt. Fuji from your room? 〈東明館〉  
.....
- (7) You mustn't leave the door open. 〈土佐塾〉  
.....
- (8) Who wrote the note?  
.....
- (9) Who will complete this work? 〈東海〉  
.....
- (10) Everybody knows them.  
.....
- (11) The news of his death surprised me. 〈中央大学附属〉  
.....
- (12) They make wine from grapes. 〈青山学院〉  
.....
- \*  (13) Smoke filled the kitchen.  
.....
- (14) Stars can be seen at night.  
.....
- (15) By whom was the door shut?  
.....
- \*  (16) The dishes have been washed by Betty. 〈金沢大学教育学部附属〉  
.....
- ㊦  (17) It is said that Mary is a kind girl.  
.....

語句

(2) elect A B AをBに選ぶ chairperson 議長 (5) take off ... ..を脱ぐ  
(8) note メモ (9) complete ... ..を完成する

**3** 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、( )内の語句を並べかえなさい。

- (1) リンダはその贈り物が気に入りました。〔1語不足〕  
( pleased / present / the / was / Linda ).
- 
- (2) 彼女はボールペンをきのう電車の中で盗まれました。〔1語不要〕 〈俊成学園〉  
Her ball-point pen ( by / train / stolen / the / on / was ) yesterday.
- 
- \*  (3) 彼はおじの世話になっている。〔1語不足〕 〈城北〉  
( uncle / taken / his / care / is / he / by ).
- 
- \*  (4) 手紙は赤インクで書いてはいけません。〔1語不足〕 〈開成〉  
( ink / written / letters / not / red / must / in ).
- 
- (5) この古い家はだれが建てましたか。 〈日本女子大学附属〉  
( this / by / house / whom / built / was / old )?
- 
- (6) その山の頂上は雪で覆われていました。  
( snow / covered / mountain / the / with / of / top / was / the ).
- 
- \*  (7) レストランでその婦人はだれに話しかけられていたのですか。 〈開成〉  
( spoken / lady / was / by / the / being / to / who ) at the restaurant?
- 

**4** 次の日本語を英語に直しなさい。ただし、受動態で表現しなさい。

- \*  (1) わたしの両親は昨晚、アメリカ人の友人に夕食に招かれました。 〈学習院〉
- 
- (2) 彼の両親は試験の結果に満足しませんでした。 〈ラ・サール〉
- 
- (3) 母はその新しい家が気に入りました。 〈広島大学附属〉
- 
- (4) あなたはなぜ笑われたのですか。 〈東京学芸大学附属〉
- 
- (5) 彼はいつどこで生まれたのですか。
- 
- (6) 日本人は外国語の修得が苦手だとよく言われます。
- 

語句

(2) …の結果 the result of … (6) …を修得する master …

## 受動態を含む連語

- ① **be born**  
She was born on August 10th.
- ② **be caught in ...**  
We were caught in a storm.
- ③ **be covered with ...**  
The ground was covered with snow.
- ④ **be concerned with ...**  
I was concerned with this project.
- ⑤ **be crowded with ...**  
The park was crowded with people.
- ⑥ **be disappointed at ...**  
I was disappointed at her failure.
- ⑦ **be engaged in ...**  
He is engaged in hard work.
- ⑧ **be filled with ...**  
The room was filled with children.
- ⑨ **be frightened at ...**  
She was frightened at the shadow of her dog.
- ⑩ **be impressed with ...**  
I was impressed with his speech.
- ⑪ **be interested in ...**  
I am interested in Japanese culture.
- ⑫ **be known to ...**  
His name is known to everybody.
- ⑬ **be made from ...**  
Paper is made from wood.
- ⑭ **be made of ...**  
The bridge was made of stone.
- ⑮ **be married to ...**  
Nancy is married to Tony.
- ⑯ **be pleased with ...**  
He was pleased with the present.
- ⑰ **be satisfied with ...**  
He is satisfied with your work.
- ⑱ **be surprised at ...**  
I was surprised at the news.
- ① 生まれる  
彼女は8月10日に生まれました。
- ② ...に遭遇する  
わたしたちは嵐に遭遇しました。
- ③ ...で覆われている  
地面は雪で覆われていました。
- ④ ...に関わる  
わたしはこのプロジェクトに関わっていました。
- ⑤ ...で混み合う  
その公園は人々で混み合っていました。
- ⑥ ...にがっかりする  
わたしは彼女の失敗にがっかりしました。
- ⑦ ...に従事する  
彼は重労働に従事しています。
- ⑧ ...でいっぱいである  
その部屋は子供たちでいっぱいでした。
- ⑨ ...にぎょっとする  
彼女は自分の犬の影にぎょっとしました。
- ⑩ ...に感動する  
わたしは彼のスピーチに感動しました。
- ⑪ ...に興味がある  
わたしは日本の文化に興味があります。
- ⑫ ...に知られている  
彼の名前はだれにでも知られています。
- ⑬ [原料] から作られる  
紙は木から作られます。
- ⑭ [材料] でできている  
その橋は石でできていました。
- ⑮ ...と結婚している  
ナンシーはトニーと結婚しています。
- ⑯ ...に喜ぶ, ...が気に入る  
彼はそのプレゼントに喜びました。
- ⑰ ...に満足する  
彼はあなたの仕事に満足しています。
- ⑱ ...に驚く  
わたしはその知らせに驚きました。

# 10 分詞

## 分詞の形と用法

### 1 現在分詞 \*《原形+ing》の形

- a 《be + 現在分詞》の形で、進行形を作る用法
- b 形容詞的用法

### 2 過去分詞 \*《原形+ed》の形になるものと不規則な形になるものがある

- a 《be + 過去分詞》の形で、受動態を作る用法
- b 《have[has] + 過去分詞》の形で、現在完了を作る用法
- c 形容詞的用法

## 分詞と形容詞

**注意** 分詞は動詞の性質を備えつつ、形容詞と同じように用いられる用法がある(分詞の形容詞的用法)。

### 1 名詞を修飾する用法

- 比較**
- a This is a beautiful bird. (美しい鳥) [beautiful = 形容詞]
  - b This is a picture of a **flying** bird. (飛んでいる鳥) [flying = 現在分詞]

### 2 補語になる用法

- 比較**
- ① a He looked happy. (彼はうれしそうでした。) [happy = 形容詞]
  - b He looked **surprised**. (彼は驚いたようでした。) [surprised = 過去分詞]
  - ② a She kept the room clean. (彼女はその部屋をきれいにしておきました。)
  - [clean = 形容詞]
  - b She kept him **waiting**. (彼女は彼を待たせておきました。)
  - [waiting = 現在分詞]

## 名詞を修飾する用法

分詞が単独の場合は前から、分詞がそれ自体の修飾語や目的語を伴う場合は名詞のうしろから修飾する。

### 1 名詞を修飾する現在分詞「～している…」 \*修飾される名詞と分詞は能動的な関係

- ① Look at that sleeping baby. (眠っている赤ちゃん)
- ② The baby sleeping in the bed is my brother. (ベッドで眠っている赤ちゃん)

### 2 名詞を修飾する過去分詞「～された…、～される…」 \*修飾される名詞と分詞は受動的な関係

- ① He bought a used car. (使われた車 = 中古車)
- ② This is a car used more than 30 years. (30年以上使われた車)

## 補語になる用法

## 1 主格補語になる場合 …… 第2文型(SVC)

- ① The baseball game was **exciting**. (その野球の試合は興奮しました。)  
 ② He became **interested** in Japanese culture. (彼は日本の文化に興味を持ちました。)

- 注意** (i) 主語と現在分詞には能動的な関係、主語と過去分詞には受動的な関係が成り立つ。  
 (ii) 分詞の使い分けに注意が必要な動詞 …… excite「…を興奮させる」、interest「…に興味を持たせる」、surprise「…を驚かせる」、shock「…にショックを与える」など。  
 (iii) ①では主語 The baseball game は《興奮させる側》なので現在分詞、②では主語 He は《興味を持たされる側》なので過去分詞を用いる。

## 2 目的格補語になる場合 …… 第5文型(SVOC)

- ① **a** Don't **keep** him **waiting**. (彼を待たせておいてはいけません。)  
**b** He **kept** the window **closed**. (彼はその窓を閉めたままにしておきました。)  
 ② **a** She **left** her baby **sleeping**. (彼女は赤ちゃんを寝かせておきました。)  
**b** She **left** the door **broken**. (彼女はそのドアをこわれたまま放っておきました。)  
 ③ **a** I **found** her **reading** a book. (わたしは彼女が本を読んでいるところを見つけました。)  
**b** I **found** my bike **stolen**. (わたしは自分の自転車が盗まれているのがわかりました。)

**注意** 目的語と現在分詞には能動的な関係、目的語と過去分詞には受動的な関係が成り立つ。

## 分詞を使った慣用表現

- a** **keep** ~ing 「～し続ける」 (=keep on ~ing)  
 The phone **kept** (on) **ringing**. (電話は鳴り続けました。)
- b** **come** ~ing 「～しながら来る」  
 He **came** **running** to me. (彼は走ってわたしのところへ来ました。)
- c** **stand** ~ing 「立って～している、～しながら立っている」  
 Many people **stood** **waiting** at the gate. (多くの人が門のところで立って待っていました。)
- d** **sit** ~ing 「すわって～している、～しながらすわっている」  
 She **sat** there **brushing** her hair. (彼女は髪をとかしながらそこにすわっていました。)
- e** **spend** … ~ing 「…を～して過ごす」  
 He **spent** the evening **listening** to music. (彼は音楽を聞いてその晩を過ごしました。)
- f** **be busy** ~ing 「忙しく～する、～することで忙しい」  
 When I came home, my mother **was** **busy** **cooking** in the kitchen.  
 (わたしが帰宅したとき、母は台所で忙しく料理をしていました。)

# 練成問題

1 次の( )に入る最も適当な語(句)をそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

- (1) The girl ( ) in front of the mirror is my sister.  
 ア is sitting イ sitting ウ sits [ ]
- \* (2) We visited the temple ( ) 500 years ago.  
 ア to build イ building ウ built [ ]
- (3) The languages ( ) in Canada are English and French.  
 ア speak イ spoke ウ spoken エ speaking オ to speak [ ]
- (4) Look at the girl ( ) to an American.  
 ア speak イ spoke ウ spoken エ speaking [ ]
- (5) The story ( ) by my father was interesting.  
 ア tells イ told ウ telling エ to tell [ ]
- \* (6) The man ( ) by the piano is our teacher.  
 ア standing イ stands ウ stood [ ]
- (7) The tower ( ) over there is a famous temple. 〈金沢大学教育学部附属〉  
 ア seeing イ seen ウ see [ ]
- (8) The mountain ( ) with snow is beautiful.  
 ア cover イ covered ウ covering [ ]
- (9) Ned has a watch ( ) in Japan.  
 ア make イ made ウ making [ ]
- \* (10) There was a ( ) cup on the desk.  
 ア break イ broken ウ breaking [ ]
- \* (11) I made up my mind to help the ( ) animal. 〈流通経済大学附属柏〉  
 ア die イ died ウ dead エ dying [ ]
- (12) Look! He hit another homer! — Oh, that's really ( ). 〈岡山白陵〉  
 ア surprise イ surprising ウ surprised エ to be surprised [ ]
- \* (13) The soccer game ( ). 〈大阪女学院〉  
 ア played yesterday was exciting イ playing yesterday was exciting [ ]  
 ウ played yesterday was excited エ playing yesterday was excited
- (14) I'm sorry to have kept you ( ) so long. 〈学習院〉  
 ア wait イ waited ウ waiting [ ]
- \* (15) I found her ( ) at the door.  
 ア smiled イ smiling ウ to smile [ ]
- \* (16) My mother is busy now ( ) our lunch.  
 ア prepare イ preparing ウ to prepare エ prepared [ ]

語句

- (1) mirror 鏡 (2) temple 寺 (11) make up one's mind 決心する  
 (12) homer ホームラン

2 次の.....に、あとの( )内の語を適当な形に直して書きなさい。

- (1) The boy ..... on the slope is my brother. (ski)
- (2) The gentleman ..... at the door is my uncle. (stand)
- (3) The language ..... in Australia is English. (speak)
- (4) The baseball game ..... yesterday was a big one. (play) 〈修道〉
- (5) The girl ..... tennis with Bob is my sister. (play)
- (6) Look at the ..... baby. (sleep)
- (7) The girl ..... a letter at the desk is my sister. (write)
- (8) Show me the letter ..... in French. (write)
- (9) He is a famous writer ..... all over the world. (know)
- (10) The watches ..... in Japan are very popular in foreign countries. (make)
- (11) Many Japanese live in houses ..... of wood. (build)
- (12) The girl ..... over there is my sister. (swim)
- (13) Don't touch the ..... wall. (paint)
- (14) Look at the stars ..... in the sky. (shine)
- (15) This is the dictionary ..... to me by my uncle. (give)
- (16) This is the fish ..... in the lake. (catch) 〈筑波大学附属駒場〉
- \*  (17) We found him ..... on the bench. (lie)
- \*  (18) I found Mt. Fuji ..... with snow. (cover) 〈東海〉
- (19) I am sorry to have kept you ..... . (wait) 〈お茶の水女子大学附属〉
- \*  (20) He stood ..... for the bus. (wait)
- \*  (21) More than five boys came ..... . (run)

3 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) 向こうでラジオを聞いている少女はわたしの妹です。  
The girl ..... the radio over there is my sister. 〈法政大学第二〉
- (2) これはグリーンさんが書いた小説です。  
This is the novel ..... Mr. Green.
- (3) あの飛んでいる鳥をごらんください。  
Look at those ..... birds.
- (4) 雪で覆われている山は富士山です。 〈城北〉  
The ..... is Mt. Fuji.
- \*  (5) わたしはやさしい英語で書いてある物語を読みたいです。  
I'd like to read a ..... 〈広島大学附属〉
- (6) その少年はわたしのところへ走ってきました。  
The boy came ..... to me.
- \*  (7) ただそこにすわってテレビを見ているだけではいけません。  
Don't just sit there ..... TV.

# 発展問題

**1** 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) (a) Mike got a letter from his pen pal. His pen pal lives in Japan.  
 (b) Mike got a letter from his pen pal ..... in Japan.
- (2) (a) I read an English book yesterday. 〈大妻中野〉  
 (b) I read a book ..... in English yesterday.
- \*  (3) (a) I know a doctor. His name is John.  
 (b) I know a doctor ..... John.
- (4) (a) Betty drew two pictures. They were very nice. 〈土佐〉  
 (b) The two pictures ..... Betty were very nice.
- (5) (a) Who is the girl in the room? She is playing the violin. 〈立命館〉  
 (b) Who is the girl ..... the violin in the room?
- \*  (6) (a) I was interested in the movie. 〈東京工業大学附属〉  
 (b) The movie was ..... me.
- (7) (a) I was bored by the speech and I became sleepy. 〈慶應義塾〉  
 (b) The ..... speech ..... sleepy.
- (8) (a) Look at the iron gate. 〈慶應義塾〉  
 (b) Look at the gate ..... iron.
- \*  (9) (a) They spoke to a boy. He lay on the grass. 〈東海〉  
 (b) They spoke to a boy ..... the grass.

**語句**

(7) bore ... ...を退屈させる (8) iron 鉄

**2** 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) これは、わたしが去年の夏泳ぎに行ったとき彼にとってもらった写真です。 〈お茶の水女子大学附属〉  
 This is the ..... by him when I went ..... last summer.
- \*  (2) 駒ヶ岳の頂上から見る日の出はとても美しい。 〈早稲田実業〉  
 The ..... sun ..... from the top of Mt. Komagatake is very beautiful.
- (3) いいと言うまで目を閉じてなさい。 〈青雲〉  
 Keep your eyes ..... until I ..... you to open them.
- (4) 大勢の人が門のところで立って待っていた。 〈東京学芸大学附属〉  
 A lot of people ..... at the gate.
- \*  (5) わたしの妹は音楽を聞いて1時間過ごしました。  
 My sister spent an hour ..... to music.
- (6) ミカは宿題をするのに忙しい。 〈日本大学〉  
 Mika is ..... her homework.

**3** 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、( )内の語句を並べかえなさい。

- (1) 日本製の車が世界中で使われています。  
( are / in / made / cars / Japan / used / the world / all over ).
- 
- \*  (2) これはわたしたちの先生が選んだ本です。 [1 語不足] (大妻中野)  
( teacher / is / book / by / this / our / the ).
- 
- (3) ベッドで眠っている赤ちゃんは生まれて6か月です。 (早稲田実業)  
( old / sleeping / six / the bed / is / in / the baby / months ).
- 
- (4) おばからいただいた鞆が気に入っています。 (日本大学第三)  
( to / aunt / I / the / like / by / me / given / bag / my ).
- 
- (5) 君はポケットに手を入れて歩いている男の子を知っていますか。 (明治学院)  
( know / in / do / with / his / the boy / pockets / his hands / you / walking )?
- 
- (6) パーティーに招待された人々は皆、楽しんで歌を歌いました。  
All the ( invited / singing / the party / to / people / enjoyed ) songs.
- 
- (7) 迷子になった子供は、両親のもとに連れ戻された。 (立命館宇治)  
( child / her / lost / parents / the / to / returned / was ).
- 
- \*  (8) 彼は店内にいる間エンジンをかけっ放しにしていた。 (慶應義塾)  
He ( while / running / he / engine / left / the ) was in the store.
- 
- (9) わたしは彼女がラケットを手にして歩いているのに気がついた。 (早稲田実業)  
( hand / racket / found / in / with / I / her / her / walking / a ).

**4** 次の日本語を英語に直しなさい。

- (1) 向こうで車を洗っている人は君のお父さんですか。 (修道)
- 
- (2) わたしは父が新聞を読んでいるのを見つけました。 (修道)
- 
- \*  (3) 彼はドイツ製のカメラを持っています。
- 
- \*  (4) 彼は友達を2時間待たせたままにしました。
-

# 11

## 関係代名詞(主格・目的格)

### 名詞を修飾する語・句・節

#### 1 名詞を修飾する語

- ① I have a beautiful dress. (わたしは美しいドレスを持っています。) [形容詞]  
 ② I want to have a singing bird. (わたしは鳴く鳥を飼いたい。) [分詞]

#### 2 名詞を修飾する句(形容詞の働きをする句)

- ① The book on the desk is mine. (机の上の本はわたしのものです。) [前置詞句]  
 ② I have a lot of homework to do. (わたしはやるべき宿題がたくさんあります。) [不定詞句]  
 ③ The boy running with a dog is Mike. (犬といっしょに走っている少年はマイクです。) [分詞句]

#### 3 名詞を修飾する節(形容詞の働きをする節)

- a I have a sister. She goes to college. (わたしには姉がいます。彼女は大学に通っています。)  
 b I have a sister who goes to college. (わたしには大学に通っている姉がいます。) [関係代名詞節]

bの文で、whoは、節と節の関係(一方が他方の節中の名詞を修飾する)を示して、2つの節を結びつける接続詞の働きと、直前の名詞を受ける代名詞(ここではshe)の働きを兼ねる。このような働きをする語を関係代名詞といい、関係代名詞節によって修飾される(代)名詞(ここではsister)を先行詞と呼ぶ。

### 主格の関係代名詞

あとに続く形容詞節中で主語の働きをする関係代名詞を主格の関係代名詞という。

#### 1 先行詞が《人》の場合…… who / that

- a I have a friend. He lives in America.  
 b I have a friend who lives in America. (わたしにはアメリカに住んでいる友達があります。)

#### 2 先行詞が《人以外のもの》の場合…… which / that

- a This is a dog. It swims well.  
 b This is a dog which swims well. (これは上手に泳ぐ犬です。)

**注意** 主格の関係代名詞 that は、先行詞が《人》、《人以外のもの》のいずれの場合にも用いることができる。

### 3 先行詞の人称・数と動詞の一致

- a I have a friend **who** swims well. (わたしには上手に泳ぐ友達が1人います。)  
 b I have many friends **who** swim well. (わたしには上手に泳ぐ友達がたくさんいます。)

### 4 関係代名詞節と分詞句

関係代名詞に進行形または受動態が続く場合、《関係代名詞 + be》を省略しても同じ意味を表す。

- ① a Look at the baby **who is** sleeping in the bed. (ベッドで眠っている赤ちゃんを見て。)  
 b Look at the baby sleeping in the bed.  
 ② a I have a car **that was** made in Germany. (わたしはドイツ製の車を持っています。)  
 b I have a car made in Germany.

## 目的格の関係代名詞

あとに続く形容詞節中で目的語の働きをする関係代名詞を目的格の関係代名詞という。

### 1 先行詞が《人》の場合 …… whom / that

- a He is the boy. I met him yesterday.  
 b He is the boy whom I met yesterday. (彼はわたしがきのう会った少年です。)

### 2 先行詞が《人以外のもの》の場合 …… which / that

- a This is the fish. I caught it yesterday.  
 b This is the fish which I caught yesterday. (これはわたしがきのう捕まえた魚です。)

**注意** 目的格の関係代名詞 that は、先行詞が《人》、《人以外のもの》のいずれの場合にも用いることができる。

## 関係代名詞節の位置

#### a 先行詞が文の補語の場合

This is the cake **which** Lisa made. (これはリサが作ったケーキです。)

#### b 先行詞が文の目的語の場合

We ate the cake **which** Lisa made. (わたしたちはリサが作ったケーキを食べました。)

#### c 先行詞が文の主語の場合 …… 文の主語と動詞の間に割り込み、主部が長くなるので注意する。

The cake **which** Lisa made was very good. (リサが作ったケーキはとてもおいしかったです。)

## 練成問題

**1** 《主格の関係代名詞》 次の**例**にならって、あとの文を2つに分解しなさい。

**例** I have a brother who plays the guitar well.  
 → I have a brother. He plays the guitar well.

- \*  (1) That is the man who works at the shop near my house.  
 That is the man. \_\_\_\_\_
- \*  (2) I met an American woman who spoke Japanese very well.  
 I met an American woman. \_\_\_\_\_
- \*  (3) The boy who came to see you yesterday was my classmate.  
 The boy was my classmate. \_\_\_\_\_
- (4) The girl who is singing over there is my sister.  
 The girl is my sister. \_\_\_\_\_
- (5) This is the train which leaves this station at 12:00.  
 This is the train. \_\_\_\_\_
- (6) He has a camera which was made in Germany.  
 He has a camera. \_\_\_\_\_
- (7) The story which was written by him was very interesting.  
 The story was very interesting. \_\_\_\_\_

**2** 《主格の関係代名詞》 次の**例**にならって、あとの2つの文を1文にまとめなさい。

**例** I have a sister. She likes cats very much.  
 → I have a sister who likes cats very much.

- \*  (1) I have a friend. He can speak French.  
 \_\_\_\_\_
- (2) I met a girl. She had long hair.  
 \_\_\_\_\_
- (3) I have an uncle. He works in New York. 〈国立高専〉  
 \_\_\_\_\_
- \*  (4) The woman has gone to London. She was here yesterday. 〈法政大学第二〉  
 \_\_\_\_\_
- \*  (5) This is the building. It was built last year.  
 \_\_\_\_\_
- (6) The book is very interesting. It tells us a lot about space.  
 \_\_\_\_\_

語句

(6) space 宇宙

**3** 《主格の関係代名詞》 次の日本文に合う英文になるように、( )内の語句を並べかえなさい。ただし、それぞれ1語ずつ不足している語があります。

\*  (1) あなたはきのうここに来た女の子を知っていますか。  
( do / the / know / came / yesterday / you / here / girl )?

(2) 彼には画家になった息子がいます。  
( a / has / an artist / became / he / son ).

\*  (3) 新聞を読んでいる男の人はわたしの父です。  
( my / the / is / is / newspaper / the / reading / man / father ).

(4) わたしはとても上手に泳ぐ犬を飼っています。  
( very / have / swims / a / I / dog / well ).

\*  (5) これらはわたしの母によって書かれた手紙です。  
( the / mother / were / letters / my / these / by / are / written ).

(6) あの丘の上に建っている白い建物は教会です。  
( on / the / a church / stands / building / that hill / is / white ).

**4** 《目的格の関係代名詞》 次の【例】にならって、あとの文を2つに分解しなさい。

【例】 She is the girl whom I met in the park yesterday.  
→ She is the girl. I met her in the park yesterday.

\*  (1) He is the teacher whom every student likes.  
He is the teacher. \_\_\_\_\_

(2) I have some friends whom I have known for more than ten years.  
I have some friends. \_\_\_\_\_

\*  (3) The girl whom I taught last year studied very hard.  
The girl studied very hard. \_\_\_\_\_

(4) The man whom I saw at the station was very tall.  
The man was very tall. \_\_\_\_\_

\*  (5) I ate the cake which my mother made.  
I ate the cake. \_\_\_\_\_

(6) The camera which I bought in Japan was very expensive.  
The camera was very expensive. \_\_\_\_\_

(7) The book which I read yesterday was interesting.  
The book was interesting. \_\_\_\_\_

5 《目的格の関係代名詞》 次の例にならって、あとの2つの文を1文にまとめなさい。

例 This is the man. I saw him in the train.

→ This is the man whom I saw in the train.

\*  (1) I know a kind teacher. Everyone likes him.

(2) That is the police officer. We asked him the way to the library.

(3) The man spoke Japanese very well. I met him yesterday.

\*  (4) This is the house. My father built it by himself.

(5) The fish was very big. I caught it yesterday.

\*  (6) This dictionary is very useful. My father bought it for me.

〈学習院〉

語句

(2) police officer 警官

6 次の( )に入る最も適当な語(句)をそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

\*  (1) We want to employ a young woman ( ) can type.

〈江戸川学園取手〉

ア who イ whose ウ whom エ which

[ ]

\*  (2) The house ( ) stands by the river looks very old.

ア who イ which ウ where エ what

[ ]

(3) Mr. Green is a teacher ( ) teaches us English.

ア he イ who ウ which

[ ]

(4) I want a house ( ) has a beautiful garden.

ア who イ whom ウ which

[ ]

(5) The woman ( ) painted this picture will come to our school next week.

ア who イ which ウ whom エ whose

[ ]

\*  (6) Jane is an American girl ( ) I have known for two years.

〈東京純心女子〉

ア what イ whose ウ whom エ which

[ ]

(7) The village ( ) I visited last year was a very quiet place.

ア which イ who ウ whom

[ ]

(8) Is this the child ( ) you saw at the park?

ア who イ whom ウ which

[ ]

\*  (9) This is one of the pictures ( ) I took in Europe.

ア who イ whom ウ which

[ ]

語句

(1) employ … …を雇う type タイプを打つ

7 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) a I know a girl. She plays the piano very well.  
b I know a girl ..... the piano very well.
- (2) a The movie actress has big blue eyes. They are very beautiful. 〈郁文館〉  
b The movie actress has big blue eyes ..... very beautiful.
- (3) a Do you know the man living in that house?  
b Do you know the man ..... in that house?
- \*  (4) a I know the girls running in the playground. 〈明治大学付属明治〉  
b I know the girls ..... running in the playground.
- (5) a This is the picture taken by my grandfather. 〈大阪女学院〉  
b This is the picture ..... by my grandfather.
- (6) a That lady is our teacher. You met her yesterday. 〈専修大学附属〉  
b That lady ..... you ..... yesterday is our teacher.
- (7) a Look at the picture taken by Paul.  
b Look at the picture ..... Paul .....
- \*  (8) a The house which has a red roof is my uncle's. 〈明治大学付属明治〉  
b The house ..... a red roof is my uncle's.

語句

(4) playground 遊び場, 運動場

8 次の日本語を、適当な関係代名詞(ただし、**that** は除く)を使って英語に直しなさい。

- (1) 彼はわたしたちに駅への道を教えてくれた親切な少年です。  
.....
- \*  (2) あなたは向こうでテニスをしている女の人をご存じですか。  
.....
- (3) これが今若い人たちに人気のある CD です。  
.....
- (4) わたしはけさ、フランス語で書かれた手紙を受け取りました。  
.....
- (5) これがわたしが日本で買ったカメラです。  
.....
- (6) わたしは父がきのうわたしにくれた本を読んでいるところです。  
.....
- \*  (7) わたしがきのう捕まえた魚はあまり大きくありませんでした。  
.....
- (8) わたしがそこで会った男の人はわたしにとっても親切にしてくれました。  
.....
- (9) 向こうに見える建物がわたしたちの学校ですよ。  
.....

# 発展問題

**1** 次の( )に入る最も適当な語(句)をそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

- (1) She is the woman ( ) I asked the way to the museum. 〈江戸川学園取手〉  
 ア which イ whose ウ whom エ where [ ]
- (2) The country ( ) is going to hold the World Cup has many things to do.  
 ア which イ who ウ what エ where [ ]
- \*  (3) There is someone at the door ( ) wants to see you.  
 ア which イ who ウ whom エ whose [ ]
- (4) Look at the house ( ) strange windows. 〈青雲〉  
 ア whose イ which ウ has エ with [ ]

**2** 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) あの大きな家に住んでいる老人は、毎朝早く起きます。 〈駒込〉  
 The old man ..... that large house gets up early every morning.
- (2) 彼は、わたしたちに人気のある歌を歌っている。 〈文教大学付属〉  
 He is singing a song ..... popular with us.
- (3) 彼女はわたしたちがよく知っている歌手です。  
 She is a singer ..... very well.
- \*  (4) あなたは自分が興味をもてる科目を選ぶべきです。 〈広島大学附属〉  
 You should choose subjects ..... you.
- \*  (5) ここはいつかもう1度訪れたい場所です。 〈慶應義塾志木〉  
 This is the place ..... I'd ..... visit again some day.

**3** 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) a He is a teacher who is loved by everybody.  
 b He is a teacher .....
- \*  (2) a He wrote this speech. 〈関西学院〉  
 b This is the speech ..... was ..... by him.
- (3) a The boy living in this house is my eldest brother. 〈郁文館〉  
 b The boy ..... in this house is my eldest brother.
- (4) a China is a big country with a long history. 〈大阪教育大学附属平野〉  
 b China is a big country ..... a long history.
- (5) a The man with books under his arms is my brother.  
 b The man ..... books under his arms is my brother.
- (6) a I don't like a man who tells a lie. 〈青山学院〉  
 b I don't like a .....

**4** 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、( )内の語句を並べかえなさい。

(1) この市を流れている川はとても美しい。  
( this / that / through / the / beautiful / city / very / run / rivers / are ).

(2) 向こうで健と話している男の子はマイクです。  
( Ken / the / with / is / there / who / Mike / boy / over / is / talking ).

\*  (3) 大阪出身のその背の高い少年はわたしの友達の1人です。 〈文教大学附属〉  
The tall boy ( of / Osaka / is / mine / from / friend / who / a / comes ).

(4) ビルが見た人々は日本の農家の人々でした。 〈文教大学附属〉  
( whom / farmers / were / Japanese / Bill / people / saw / the ).

(5) わたしたちが昼食に食べたステーキはおいしかった。 〈近畿大学附属〉  
( that / the steak / ate / we / good / for / was / lunch ).

\*  (6) これがあなたがなくした指輪ですか。  
( ring / lost / you / is / which / this / the )?

(7) その青い目をした猫はいつも寂しそうだ。 〈成城〉  
( always / blue / cat / eyes / has / lonely / looks / the / which ).

(8) 彼女はわたしが行こうとしている島へ1回も行ったことはありません。 〈渋谷教育学園幕張〉  
( to / I'm / been / visit / has / the island / that / to / going / never / she ).

(9) アフガニスタンに住む子供たちを助けるのにわたしたちは何ができるだろうか。 〈洛南〉  
What ( can / children / do / help / live / to / we / who ) in Afghanistan?

**5** 次の日本語を英語に直しなさい。

(1) 京都は長い間わたしが訪れたいと思っていた場所です。

\*  (2) きノウ会った女の人はわたしにたいへん親切でした。 〈修道〉

(3) きノウ買った本を貸してあげましょうか。

(4) わたしは先日彼から借りた本をまだ読み終わっていません。 〈ラ・サール〉

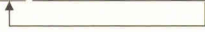
# 12

## 関係代名詞(接触節・所有格)

### 接触節

目的格の関係代名詞は省略できる。その場合、先行詞に形容詞節が直接続く。これを接触節という。

① a She is the girl **whom[that]** I met at the party. (彼女はわたしがパーティーで会った少女です。)



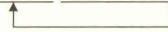
b She is the girl I met at the party. [接触節]



② a This is the watch **which[that]** I bought yesterday. (これがわたしがきのう買った時計です。)



b This is the watch I bought yesterday. [接触節]



**注意** (i) 口語の場合、目的格の関係代名詞は省略するのが普通である。

(ii) 主格の関係代名詞は省略できない。

(○) I have a friend who lives in Tokyo.

(×) I have a friend lives in Tokyo.

### 所有格の関係代名詞

あとに続く形容詞節中で所有格の代名詞の働きをする関係代名詞を所有格の関係代名詞という。

所有格の関係代名詞は先行詞による使い分けはなく、**whose**のみである。省略することはできない。

① a He has a daughter. Her name is Mary.



b He has a daughter **whose** name is Mary. (彼にはメアリーという名前の娘がいます。)



② a This is a word. I don't know its meaning.



b This is a word **whose** meaning I don't know. (これはわたしが意味を知らない単語です。)



**注意** (i) 関係代名詞 **whose** は、それが修飾する名詞と結びついた形《**whose + 名詞**》で用いる。

(×) This is a word whose I don't know meaning.

(ii) 《**whose + 名詞**》は、あとに続く形容詞節中で主語(① — **b**)や目的語(② — **b**)の一部になる。

(iii) 関係代名詞の使い分け

先行詞	主格「…は」	所有格「…の」	目的格「…を」
人	who	whose	whom
人以外のもの	which		which
人, 人以外のもの	that		that

## 注意すべき関係代名詞の用法

## 1 that の特別用法

次のような場合は、**that** を用いることが多い。

- a** 先行詞が, the very, the only, the first などの強い限定的な語で修飾される場合。
- ① This is the only problem **that** was solved by the boy.  
(これがその男の子によって解かれた唯一の問題でした。)
- ② Mike was the first boy **that** replied. (マイクは返答した最初の男の子でした。)
- b** 先行詞が, every, all, no, any, 序数, 形容詞の最上級などに修飾されている場合。
- ① This is all the money (**that**) I have. (これがわたしの持っているすべてのお金です。)
- ② This is the most interesting book (**that**) I have ever read.  
(これはわたしが今まで読んだ中で最もおもしろい本です。)
- c** nobody, everything, anything などが先行詞になる場合。  
I did everything **that** was possible to do the work.  
(わたしはその仕事をするために可能であることをすべてやりました。)
- d** 先行詞に《人》, 《人以外のもの》の両方を含む場合。  
I know the boy and his dog **that** walk in this park every morning.  
(わたしは毎朝この公園で散歩をする少年と犬を知っています。)
- 注意** (i) 《人》が先行詞のときは, **a**~**c** の場合でも who を使うことも多い。  
(ii) 上記のいずれの場合でも, 関係代名詞 **that** は, 目的格であれば省略できる(**b**—①②)。

## 2 《前置詞+関係代名詞》

目的格の関係代名詞 **whom**, **which** には, 前置詞の目的語としての働きもある。前置詞は, そのままあとに残すことも, 《前置詞+関係代名詞》の形で先行詞に続けることもできる。

- ① **a** This is the house. They live in **it**.  
**b** This is the house (**which**) they live in. (これが彼らが住んでいる家です。)  
**c** This is the house (**that**) they live in.  
**d** This is the house in **which** they live.
- ② **a** She is the girl. I spoke of **her** the other day.  
**b** She is the girl (**whom**) I spoke of the other day.  
(彼女が先日わたしが話した少女です。)  
**c** She is the girl (**that**) I spoke of the other day.  
**d** She is the girl of **whom** I spoke the other day.
- 注意** (i) 前置詞をあとに残す場合は, 関係代名詞は省略できる(①—**b****c**, ②—**b****c**)。  
(ii) 《前置詞+関係代名詞》の形では, 関係代名詞は省略できない①—**d**, ②—**d**。  
(iii) 関係代名詞 **that** は《前置詞+関係代名詞》の形で用いることができない。

## 練 成 問 題

**1** 《接触節》 次の文では、目的格の関係代名詞が省略されています。**例** にならって、その位置と関係代名詞（ただし、**that** は除く）を示しなさい。

**例** This is the book my father gave me.  
→ This is the book / my father gave me. ( which )

- \*  (1) The letter I got yesterday was written in French. (                    )
- (2) These are the pictures my father took in London. (                    )
- (3) The students I taught yesterday were able to speak English very well. (                    )
- \*  (4) They are the scientists I am interested in. (                    )

**2** 《接触節》 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、(        )内の語句を並べかえなさい。

- \*  (1) わたしたちが図書館で会った男の人はとても親切でした。 (洛南)  
( in / kind / met / the man / the library / very / was / we ).

- (2) わたしの母が作ってくれたドレスはこれよりかわいい。  
( made / my mother / this / than / is / prettier / the dress ).

- (3) リチャードはおじの経営するドラッグストアで働いていた。 (慶應義塾)  
Richard ( uncle / drugstore / his / at / ran / worked / the ).

- \*  (4) 君に伝えておきたいことがあるのですが。 (都文館)  
( is / I / like / something / there / you / tell / would / to ).

語句

(3) …を経営する run …

**3** 《所有格の関係代名詞》 次の**例** にならって、あとの2つの文を1文にまとめなさい。

**例** Mr. Smith has a daughter. Her name is Jane.  
→ Mr. Smith has a daughter whose name is Jane.

- \*  (1) He saw a girl. Her hair was long.

- (2) The picture was painted by a man. His name was Pablo Picasso.

- \*  (3) The mountain is very beautiful. Its top is covered with snow.

- (4) I entered the room. Its wall was black.

**4** 《所有格の関係代名詞》 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、( )内の語句を並べかえなさい。ただし、それぞれ1語ずつ不足している語があります。

(1) わたしには父親が警察官をしている友達がいます。  
( a / a / have / is / police officer / friend / I / father ).

(2) あなたはその髪の毛の長い女の人を知っていますか。  
( know / is / the / do / long / you / woman / hair )?

\*  (3) あの赤い屋根の家はわたしのおばの家です。  
( my / red / the / is / is / house / aunt's / roof ).

**5** 次の\_\_\_\_\_に、**which, who, whose, whom**の中から最も適当なものをそれぞれ1つずつ選んで書きなさい。

- \*  (1) I have a friend \_\_\_\_\_ is a doctor.  
 (2) Tell me the name of the hotel \_\_\_\_\_ stands by that river.  
 (3) The man \_\_\_\_\_ I saw in the park yesterday is a famous actor.  
\*  (4) Nara is a beautiful city \_\_\_\_\_ history is very long.  
 (5) That is the girl \_\_\_\_\_ father I know well.  
\*  (6) Is that the pianist of \_\_\_\_\_ you spoke the day before yesterday?

語句

(3) actor 俳優, 役者 (6) the day before yesterday おととい

**6** 次の( )に入る最も適当な語(句)をそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

- (1) He is a foreigner ( ). 〈城北埼玉〉  
 ア his language I cannot understand イ I cannot understand his language [ ]  
 ウ which language I cannot understand エ whose language I cannot understand
- \*  (2) Is language the only way ( ) we use for communication?  
 ア who イ which ウ that エ whose [ ]
- (3) All the books ( ) I've read are my father's.  
 ア who イ that ウ whose エ whom [ ]
- (4) This is the biggest tree ( ) I have ever seen.  
 ア that イ which ウ who エ whose [ ]
- \*  (5) Look at the girl and the dog ( ) are running.  
 ア whose イ who ウ that エ whom [ ]
- (6) This is the village in ( ) the doctor has lived for a year.  
 ア that イ which ウ who エ whose [ ]
- \*  (7) He has no friends ( ) he can talk. 〈流通経済大学附属柏〉  
 ア whom イ with whom ウ by whom エ from whom [ ]

# 発展問題

**1** 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) これらはわたしたちが昨年ハワイで撮った写真です。 〈文教大学付属〉  
 These are the pictures ..... in Hawaii last year.
- \*  (2) 赤い屋根の家をごらんください。 〈城北〉  
 Look at the house .....
- (3) 彼女の飼っている犬は耳が長い。 〈修道〉  
 She has a dog ..... long.
- \*  (4) あなたが手に持っているものをみんなわたしに見せてください。 〈関西学院〉  
 Show me ..... you have in your hands.
- (5) あ的那个人がわたしたちがいっしょに話をした人です。 〈ラ・サール〉  
 That is the man ..... we had a talk.
- \*  (6) こんなところで君に会おうとは思っていなかった。 〈甲陽学院〉  
 You are ..... man I expected to meet here.
- \*  (7) 月はわたしたちが住んでいる地球より小さい。 〈巣鴨〉  
 The moon is smaller than the earth .....

**2** 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) a) I read the book yesterday. It was very interesting. 〈日本女子大学付属〉  
 b) The book ..... yesterday was very interesting.
- \*  (2) a) I have read all the books written by him.  
 b) I have read all the books .....
- (3) a) The tall man called Bob plays basketball very well. 〈修道〉  
 b) The tall man ..... name is Bob plays basketball very well.
- (4) a) Kate is a girl ..... has blue eyes. 〈法政大学女子〉  
 b) Kate is a girl ..... eyes ..... blue.
- (5) a) Look. The house with a red roof is mine. 〈城北埼玉〉  
 b) Look. The house ..... red is mine.
- \*  (6) a) She is a famous singer. We know her name well. 〈修道〉  
 b) She is a famous singer ..... well.
- (7) a) I've never visited such a beautiful place.  
 b) This is the ..... beautiful place ..... I've ever visited.
- \*  (8) a) This is the house. The doctor was born in the house.  
 b) This is the house ..... the doctor was born.
- (9) a) This is the boy. I gave the book to him.  
 b) This is the boy ..... I gave the book.

**3** 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、( )内の語句を並べかえなさい。

- (1) おじがわたしにくれた時計はどこにありますか。 〈都立工業高専〉  
( is / gave / my / watch / where / the / uncle ) me?  
-----
- (2) 両親をなくした子供たちにはやさしくしてあげなさい。 [ 1 語不足] 〈開成〉  
( kind / to / be / children / dead / the / parents / are ).  
-----
- (3) 彼は君が探している人だ。 〈久留米大学附設〉  
( whom / looking / are / for / is / you / man / he / the ).  
-----
- \*  (4) 線路の向こうに屋根が見えるのが、わたしたちの教会です。 [ 1 語不足] 〈駿台甲府〉  
( our church / the building / beyond / roof / is / see / the railroad / can / you ).  
-----
- \*  (5) その湖へ行く道は彼しか知らないのですか。 [ 1 語不要]  
( way / the / the / the / goes / he / lake / that / knows / person / only / to / is )?  
-----
- \*  (6) わたしはこんなにきれいな夕焼けを見たことがありません。 [ 1 語不足] 〈学習院〉  
( have / this / I / beautiful / is / sunset / ever / most / the ).  
-----
- (7) 君はただ最善を尽くせばそれでよい。 [ 1 語不足] 〈慶應義塾志木〉  
( your best / you / to / to / have / do / do / is ).  
-----

語句

(4) …の向こうに beyond … (6) 夕焼け sunset

**4** 次の日本語を英語に直しなさい。

- \*  (1) このクラスには、父親が先生をしている生徒が4人います。 〈学習院〉  
-----
- (2) 先日あなたがわたしにお送りくださった本は今度の日曜日に読みます。 〈青山学院〉  
-----
- \*  (3) わたしは先日撮った写真2枚をあなたに送るつもりです。 〈灘〉  
-----
- (4) これがわたしが彼について知っているすべてです。 〈立命館〉  
-----
- (5) このスーパーマーケットでは毎日の生活に必要なものは何でも買えます。 〈東京学芸大学附属〉  
-----
- Ⓢ  (6) けさわたしが君に会ったとき話していた女の人はだれですか。 〈慶應義塾〉  
-----

語句

(2) 先日 the other day (5) 毎日の生活 everyday life

# 13 間接疑問文

## 間接疑問文の働きと形

ふつうの疑問文を直接疑問文というのに対し、疑問文が文の一部になっている場合は、その疑問文を間接疑問文という。間接疑問文は文中で名詞節の働きをする。

### 1 疑問詞を用いた疑問文の場合 …… 《疑問詞＋主語＋(助)動詞～》

疑問詞を接続詞として用い、疑問詞のうしろに疑問文をふつうの文(平叙文)の形に直したものを続ける。

- ① a Where does he live?  
 b I know **where** he lives.  
 (わたしは彼がどこに住んでいるの知っています。)
- ② a How old is she?  
 b Do you know **how old** she is?  
 (あなたは彼女が何歳なのか知っていますか。)
- ③ a What is this? [what = 補語]  
 b I don't know **what** this is.  
 (わたしはこれが何であるか知りません。)
- ④ a What is in the box? [what = 主語]  
 b Can you tell me **what** is in the box?  
 (その箱に何が入っているか教えてもらえますか。)

**注意** (i) 主節が平叙文の場合は文尾が終止符(① — **b**, ③ — **b**)、主節が疑問文の場合は文尾が疑問符(② — **b**, ④ — **b**)となる。

(ii) 疑問詞が主語の疑問文の場合、間接疑問文の語順は《疑問詞＋(助)動詞～》となる(④ — **b**)。

(iii) 主節の時制が過去の場合は時制の一致を受ける。

I knew where he was.

(わたしは彼がどこにいるか知っていました。)

### 2 疑問詞を用いない疑問文の場合 …… 《if[whether]＋主語＋(助)動詞～》

接続詞 **if** または **whether** 「…かどうか」を用い、そのうしろに疑問文をふつうの文(平叙文)の形に直したものを続ける。

- ① a Does Tom like baseball?  
 b Do you know **if[whether]** Tom likes baseball?  
 (あなたはトムが野球を好きかどうか知っていますか。)
- ② a Will she come to the party?  
 b I don't know **if[whether]** she will come to the party.  
 (わたしは彼女がパーティーに来るかどうか知りません。)

**注意** 主節の時制が過去の場合は、**1**と同様に時制の一致を受ける。

I didn't know **if[whether]** she would come to the party.

(わたしは彼女がパーティーに来るかどうか知りませんでした。)

## 間接疑問文の文中での位置

間接疑問文は名詞節の働きをするので、文中で主語、目的語、補語の役割をすることができる。

## a 主語になる場合

① **Whether** it will be sunny tomorrow is uncertain.

(あした晴れるかどうかははっきりしません。)

② It doesn't matter **where** you are from.

(あなたがどこの出身であるかは問題ではありません。)

**注意** ②は形式主語 it を用いた文。真の主語は where 以下である。

## b 補語になる場合

The question is **why** he did such a thing.

(問題はなぜ彼がそんなことをしたのかということです。)

## c 動詞の目的語になる場合

Do you know **what time** he will arrive in Tokyo?

(あなたは彼が何時に東京に到着するのか知っていますか。)

## d 前置詞の目的語になる場合

Your success depends on **how** hard you try.

(あなたの成功はあなたがどれだけ一生懸命努力するかにかかっています。)

## e その他の場合

① I am not sure **which** bus I should take.

(わたしはどのバスに乗ればよいのかははっきりわかりません。)

② I have no idea **how** he solved the problem.

(わたしは彼がどうやってその問題を解いたのか見当が付きません。)

**注意** e は、d (前置詞の目的語になる場合)の前置詞が省略されたものとも考えられる。

I have no idea (about) **how** he solved the problem.

## 間接疑問文を使う注意すべき表現

**比較** ① Do you know **who** he is? (あなたは彼がだれか知っていますか。)

② **Who** do you think he is? (あなたは彼がだれだと思いますか。)

(×) Do you think who he is?

**注意** (i) ①は yes / no で答えられるが、②は答えられない。すなわち、②は I think he is Mike's father. のように答えるべき疑問文なので、疑問詞を文頭に出す。

(ii) ②の形をとる動詞の例 …… believe, think, suppose 「思う」など。

## 練 成 問 題

**1** 次の**例**にならって、あとの疑問文を、与えられた書き出しに続く形に直して書きなさい。

**例** Where does Jane live?  
→ I don't know where Jane lives.

- \*  (1) Where is my dictionary?  
I don't know .....
- \*  (2) When did Mr. Green come to Japan?  
Do you know .....
- \*  (3) What is in that box?  
I don't know .....
- \*  (4) What sport does Mike like?  
Do you know .....
- (5) How long has she been sick in bed?  
Please tell me .....
- (6) How old will he be on his next birthday?  
I don't know .....
- (7) How many students are there in this school?  
Do you know .....
- (8) What will happen next?  
I wonder .....

**2** 次の( )に入る最も適当な語(句)をそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

- (1) Do you know ( ) Mr. Smith lives now? 〈高知学芸〉  
ア when    イ who    ウ where    エ what [     ]
- \*  (2) He asked me ( ) I would do when I finished school. 〈日本大学豊山〉  
ア what    イ if    ウ when    エ that [     ]
- (3) Please tell me who ( ). [     ]  
ア is he    イ he is    ウ was he    エ he will be
- (4) Do you have any idea ( )? 〈東大寺学園〉  
ア when closes the bank    イ when does close the bank [     ]  
ウ when does the bank close    エ when the bank closes
- (5) Have you ever heard ( )? 〈浦和明の星女子〉  
ア how old is our teacher    イ how is our teacher old [     ]  
ウ how old our teacher is    エ how our teacher is old
- \*  (6) I wonder ( ① ) I ( ② ) choose. 〈明治学院〉  
ア ① which way    ② should    イ ① why    ② will [     ]  
ウ ① how    ② to    エ ① what book    ② has to

**3** 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) わたしは彼の年齢を知っています。  
I know how old .....
- (2) あなたはこれは何か知っていますか。 〈修道〉  
Do you know ..... ?
- (3) あなたはきのう彼がどこに行ったか知っていますか。 〈高知学芸〉  
Do you know ..... yesterday?
- \*  (4) 彼はどうやって英語を勉強しているのだろう。  
I wonder ..... English.
- (5) あなたはそのようなおもしろい本の作者を知っていますか。 〈明治大学付属中野〉  
Do you know ..... such an interesting book?
- \*  (6) 彼が何をほしがっているのかわたしにはわからなかった。 〈名古屋大学教育学部附属〉  
I didn't know .....
- \*  (7) なぜ彼がきょう学校を休んだのかあなたは知っていますか。  
Do you know ..... ?
- (8) わたしはその箱の中身が何かわからなかった。 〈広島大学附属〉  
I didn't ..... the box.

**4** 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、( )内の語句を並べかえなさい。

- (1) 君は彼がどこでその辞書を買ったのか知っていますか。  
( you / bought / he / the / where / know / do / dictionary )?  
.....
- (2) あなたは世界にどれくらいの数の言語があるか知っていますか。  
( many / do / in / languages / know / how / there / world / you / the / are )?  
.....
- \*  (3) わたしにどのバスに乗ればよいか教えてください。  
( should / bus / tell / take / I / please / which / me ).  
.....
- \*  (4) マイクはいつ運転を覚えたのかしら。  
( wonder / learned / Mike / when / how / drive / I / to ).  
.....
- \*  (5) あなたはあの少女がだれか知っていますか。 〈巣鴨〉  
( do / girl / you / that / who / is / know )?  
.....
- (6) わたしはジムがいつ帰ってくるのかよくわかりません。 〈明治大学付属明治〉  
( when / not / Jim / am / return / sure / will / I ).  
.....

# 発展問題

**1** 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

(1) あした何が起こるかだれも知らない。 〈成城学園〉  
 No one knows ..... tomorrow.

(2) わたしの家がどこかわからなければ、住所を教えてください。 〈広島大学附属〉  
 If you ....., I'll give you my address.

\*  (3) この種の小説に興味があるのはだれかしら。  
 I ..... this kind of novel.

\*  (4) あなたは彼がいつ東京へ出発すると思いますか。 〈慶應義塾志木〉  
 ..... he will leave ..... Tokyo?

(5) 君が彼のことをどう思おうとわたしの知ったことではない。 〈お茶の水女子大学附属〉  
 It matters little to me .....

**2** 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

(1) (a) When will he come back? Do you know? 〈成城学園〉  
 (b) Do you know .....

(2) (a) My mother doesn't know his address. 〈東京工業大学附属〉  
 (b) My mother doesn't know ..... he .....

\*  (3) (a) Do you know my age? 〈大阪教育大学附属平野〉  
 (b) Do you know how .....

(4) (a) Do you know the name of this flower? 〈京華〉  
 (b) Do you know ..... this flower is called?

\*  (5) (a) Do you know what they call this flower in Japanese? 〈関西学院〉  
 (b) Do you know the Japanese ..... this flower?

(6) (a) I don't know the meaning of the word. 〈上宮太子〉  
 (b) I don't know ..... the word .....

(7) (a) I don't know when he was born. 〈慶應義塾〉  
 (b) I don't know when ..... is.

(8) (a) Please ask him the number of students in his class. 〈慶應義塾〉  
 (b) Please ask him ..... students ..... are in his class.

\*  (9) (a) Please tell me the time and place of the meeting. 〈法政大学第二〉  
 (b) Please tell me ..... and ..... we will have the meeting.

(10) (a) I'd like to know the time of your arrival.  
 (b) I'd like to know ..... will .....

語句

(9) meeting 会合 (10) arrival 到着

**3** 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、( )内の語句を並べかえなさい。

- (1) ジョンがいつ日本を発つのかわかりません。 (大妻中野)  
( know / John / leave / I / will / when / Japan / don't ).
- .....
- \*  (2) あなたは太郎があしたここに来るかどうか知っていますか。  
Do ( you / know / here / will come / if / Taro ) tomorrow?
- .....
- \*  (3) 今何時かわからない。 (栄東)  
( I / no / it / idea / is / what / time / have ) now.
- .....
- (4) あなたは地球から太陽までどれくらいあるか知っていますか。 (郁文館)  
( do / the earth / from / far / how / is / it / know / the sun / to / you )?
- .....
- \*  (5) 彼は新しい学校でどうしているのかしら。 [ 1 語不要 ]  
( school / doing / in / he / his / how / I / of / new / wonder / is ).
- .....
- (6) 彼女は何歳だと思えますか。 (開成)  
( you / is / how / she / think / do / old )?
- .....
- \*  (7) だれがこの絵を描いたと思えますか。 (中央大学附属杉並)  
( this / you / picture / who / think / painted / do )?
- .....

**4** 次の日本語を英語に直しなさい。

- (1) 君は彼がいつヨーロッパから帰国するつもりでいるか知っていますか。 (青雲)
- .....
- (2) それがだれのペンかだれも知らなかった。 (ラ・サール)
- .....
- (3) わたしは生徒たちが1日に何時間勉強するのか知りたい。 (甲陽学院)
- .....
- \*  (4) あなたはなぜ笑われたのか知っていますか。 (東京学芸大学附属)
- .....
- (5) 彼女はなぜそのような古い話に興味があるのかしら。 (お茶の水女子大学附属)
- .....
- \*  (6) この学校には生徒が何人いると思えますか。 (甲陽学院)
- .....
- (7) 最近ではほとんどの学校に図書館がありますが、 どうしてだと思えますか。 (灘)
- .....

## 14

## 付加疑問文・否定疑問文

## 付加疑問文の意味と形

ふつうの文の文末をカンマ(,)で区切り、そのあとに疑問形を付加して疑問文とすることによって、「…でしょう、…ですね」と同意を求めたり、念を押したりすることができる。このような形の文を付加疑問文という。前の文が肯定文のときは否定の疑問形、否定文のときは肯定の疑問形を付ける。否定の疑問形はふつう短縮形を用いる。時制、人称は前の文に一致するが、主語には代名詞を用いる。

**a** am[are / is / was / were] を含む文の付加疑問文

- ① It is a nice day today, **isn't it?**  
肯定文          否定の疑問形
- ② Jack wasn't late, **was he?**  
否定文          肯定の疑問形

**b** 一般動詞を含む文の付加疑問文

- ① You like English, **don't you?**
- ② Maki didn't attend the meeting, **did she?**

**c** 助動詞を含む文の付加疑問文

- ① You can drive a car, **can't you?**
- ② The boys won't come to the party, **will they?**

**d** 現在完了の文の付加疑問文

- ① Tom has lived in Japan for more than ten years, **hasn't he?**
- ② You haven't finished your homework, **have you?**

## 注意すべき付加疑問文

**a** Let's で始まる文の付加疑問文 …… shall we? を付ける。

Let's dance, **shall we?** — Yes, let's. / No, let's not.

**b** 命令文の付加疑問文 …… 肯定・否定とも will you? を付ける。

- ① Shut the door, **will you?**
- ② Don't go away, **will you?**

**注意** (i) 命令文の付加疑問文は、命令の意味がやわらげられ、依頼や、念を押す意味が強まる。  
(ii) 肯定の命令文の場合には、won't you? も可。

**c** not 以外の否定語を用いた否定文の付加疑問文 …… 肯定の疑問形を付ける。

- ① Your sister has **never** visited a foreign country, **has she?**
- ② We have **no** classes in the afternoon today, **do we?**

## 否定疑問文の意味と形

「…ですか」とたずねるふつうの疑問文に対し、「…ではないのですか」と否定の内容をたずねる疑問文を否定疑問文という。否定疑問文は、否定の疑問形を文頭に置く。否定の疑問形はふつう短縮形を用いる。

**比較** **a** Are you happy? [肯定疑問文]

**b** Aren't you happy? [否定疑問文]

**a** am[are / is / was / were] を含む文の否定疑問文

Isn't he a high school student?

**b** 一般動詞を含む文の否定疑問文

Don't you have any homework today?

**c** 助動詞を含む文の否定疑問文

Won't they come to the party?

**d** 現在完了の文の否定疑問文

Hasn't she arrived at the station yet?

## 付加疑問文・否定疑問文に対する答え方

答えの内容が肯定なら Yes, 否定なら No を用いて答える。

① You play soccer, **don't you**? (しますよね) — **Yes**, I do. (はい, します。)

— **No**, I don't. (いいえ, しません。)

② You don't play soccer, **do you**? (しませんよね) — **Yes**, I do. (いいえ, します。)

— **No**, I don't. (はい, しません。)

③ **Don't you** play soccer? (しないのですか) — **Yes**, I do. (いいえ, します。)

— **No**, I don't. (はい, しません。)

**注意** 上記いずれの場合も、Do you play soccer? に対する答え方とまったく同じである。すなわち、「する」なら Yes, 「しない」なら No で答える。否定文の付加疑問文(②)および否定疑問文(③)では、Yes, No が日本語の「はい」、「いいえ」と逆になることに注意する。

## 注意すべき否定疑問文

**a** Why don't you ~? 「～してはどうですか。」《提案・勧誘》

Why don't you try some Japanese food? (= Why not try some Japanese food?)

**b** Why don't we ~? 「(いっしょに)～しませんか。」《勧誘》

Why don't we go shopping this afternoon?

# 練成問題

**1** 《付加疑問文》 次の英文に付加疑問を付けなさい。

- \*  (1) You are busy, ..... ?
- (2) Your brother likes English, ..... ?
- (3) You know his address, ..... ?
- (4) This flower smells sweet, ..... ? 〈関西学院〉
- \*  (5) Your sister read the story, ..... ?
- (6) Most children can ride a bicycle, ..... ?
- (7) Some of your friends have gone to America, ..... ?
- \*  (8) That man isn't Mr. Green, ..... ?
- \*  (9) You don't know how old she is, ..... ? 〈学習院〉
- (10) They won't go swimming tomorrow, ..... ?
- \*  (11) He hasn't finished his work, ..... ?
- \*  (12) Let's go to Disneyland, ..... ?
- (13) Start at once, ..... ? 〈土佐〉
- (14) Shut all the windows, ..... ?
- \*  (15) Don't play soccer in this park, ..... ?
- \*  (16) There was no water in the pool, ..... ? 〈土佐塾〉
- (17) He has never studied French, ..... ? 〈灘〉

**2** 《付加疑問文》 次の日本語に合う英文になるように, ..... に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) あの子供たちは君のお友達でしたよね。 〈駒込〉  
Those children were your friends, ..... ?
- (2) 日本では2月はとても寒いですね。  
In Japan, it's very cold in February, ..... ?
- (3) あなたのお母さんがそう言われるのですね。  
Your mother says so, ..... ?
- (4) スミスさんはロンドンに1か月滞在したのですね。  
Mr. Smith stayed in London for a month, ..... ?
- \*  (5) あなたの弟さんは運転できませんよね。  
Your brother can't drive a car, ..... ?
- (6) あなたは長いこと彼に会っていないのですよね。  
You haven't seen him for a long time, ..... ?
- \*  (7) 砂糖をこちらへまわしてください。 〈青山学院〉  
Pass me the sugar, ..... ?
- \*  (8) 先週は雨がぜんぜん降りませんでしたね。  
We had no rain last week, ..... ?

3 《否定疑問文》 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) 彼らは中国出身ではないのですか。  
..... from China?
- (2) この国では英語は話されていないのですか。  
..... spoken in this country?
- (3) あなたがたは土曜日は学校へ行かないのですか。  
..... go to school on Saturdays?
- \* (4) トムはテレビでその野球の試合を見なかったのですか。  
..... watch the baseball game on TV?
- \* (5) 彼は海で泳がないのでしょうか。  
..... swim in the sea?
- \* (6) わたしは彼の宿題を手伝うべきではないのですか。  
..... help him with his homework?
- \* (7) 彼らはまだ昼食を食べていないのですか。  
..... eaten lunch yet?
- (8) 彼女は先週からこの自転車を使っていないのですか。  
..... used this bike since last week?

4 《否定疑問文》 次の例にならって、あとの英文を否定疑問文にし、( )内の語を使って答えの文を書きなさい。

例 You are tired. ( Yes )  
→ Aren't you tired? — Yes, I am.

- \* (1) Tom's brother is a college student. ( Yes )  
.....
- (2) He was working in the office then. ( No )  
.....
- (3) Ms. Kato has a lot of friends. ( Yes )  
.....
- \* (4) You like Japanese food. ( No )  
.....
- (5) He will come again. ( Yes )  
.....
- \* (6) You could answer the question. ( No )  
.....
- (7) You have been busy lately. ( Yes )  
.....
- (8) That girl has finished her homework. ( No )  
.....

# 発展問題

**1** 次の( )に入る最も適当な語(句)をそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

- \*  (1) Tom bought the CD, ( )? 〈駿台甲府〉  
 ア does he    イ wasn't Tom    ウ didn't he    エ didn't Tom    [ ]
- \*  (2) Mary doesn't have any aunts, ( )? 〈京華〉  
 ア has she    イ hasn't she    ウ does she    エ doesn't she    [ ]
- \*  (3) Ken will be back soon, ( ) he? 〈東京純心女子〉  
 ア doesn't    イ isn't    ウ won't    エ will    [ ]
- (4) You haven't been there before, ( )? 〈森村学園〉  
 ア did you    イ didn't you    ウ have you    エ haven't you    [ ]
- (5) Let's go for a walk, ( )? 〈浦和明の星女子〉  
 ア shall we    イ do we    ウ can we    [ ]
- \*  (6) I think his wife is an American, ( )? 〈青雲〉  
 ア is she    イ isn't she    ウ do I    エ don't I    [ ]
- (7) You're not going to cook dinner tonight, are you? — ( ) 〈城北埼玉〉  
 ア No, I am going to.    イ No, I am not.  
 ウ Yes, I am not.    エ Yes, I do.    [ ]
- (8) What kind of Japanese food do you recommend to me? — Why ( ) try *sushi*? 〈栄東〉  
 ア don't you    イ do you    ウ aren't you    エ are you    [ ]
- \*  (9) Hey, how about having a cup of coffee? — OK, ( ) not? 〈東大寺学園〉  
 ア certainly    イ could    ウ why    エ if    [ ]
- \*  (10) I'm going to America next April. — ( ) Great! 〈市川〉  
 ア Have you?    イ Do you?    ウ Are you?    エ Don't you?    [ ]

語句

(8) recommend … …を勧める

**2** 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) 元気がないようですね。  
 You don't ....., ..?
- \*  (2) 君と彼は3年間ずっと同じクラスだよ。 〈修道〉  
 You and he ..... the same class for three years,  
 ..... you?
- \*  (3) あなたは宿題をしませんでしたね。—いいえ、しましたよ。  
 You didn't do your homework, ..... you? — ....., I ..
- (4) ピーター、一杯飲もうよ。—うん、そうしよう。 〈慶應義塾志木〉  
 Let's have a drink, ....., Peter? — ....., ..
- \*  (5) 映画に行きませんか。 〈高知学芸〉  
 ..... go to the movies?

3 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) a How about going to the concert? (関西学院)  
b Let's ..... to the concert, ..... we?
- (2) a How about going fishing with us next Saturday, Tom?  
b ..... don't you go fishing with us next Saturday, Tom?
- (3) a Why don't we give her a present? (土佐塾)  
b ..... give a present ..... her.
- (4) a Is he still sleeping? (慶應義塾)  
b Hasn't ..... yet?

4 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、( )内の語句を並べかえなさい。

- (1) その店は駅の前にあるのですね。 (名古屋大学教育学部附属)  
( front / in / is / isn't / it / station / store / the / the / of )?  
.....
- \*  (2) 彼女はお母さんによく似ていますね。  
( like / she / very / she / her / looks / doesn't / much / mother )?  
.....
- (3) そんなにうるさくしないでって君に頼んだでしょ。 (渋谷教育学園幕張)  
( make / you / much / didn't / not / noise / so / ask / to / I )?  
.....
- (4) あなたはなぜ彼が遅刻したか知らないのですね。 (近畿大学附属)  
( you / why / late / do / he / was / don't / know ) you?  
.....
- (5) 図書館の前の店でコーヒーを飲みませんか。 [3語不要] (桐蔭学園)  
( why don't / of / the shop / let's / we have / will / behind / in / some coffee / at / front ) the library?  
.....

5 次の日本語を英語に直しなさい。

- (1) その機械の動かし方はもう習いましたね。 (土佐)  
.....
- \*  (2) あなたのお母さんは野球には興味がないのですね。  
.....
- \*  (3) きのう、彼はあなたの家へ来なかったのですか。— はい、来ませんでした。  
.....
- (4) このコンピュータはeメールを送ることができないのですか。— いいえ、できます。  
.....

語句

- (1) その機械を動かす run the machine (4) eメール e-mail

# 15 名詞・冠詞

## 名詞の分類

- a** 普通名詞 …… 具体的な形をもち、1つ、2つと数えられるもの。その他、回数・度数が考えられるものや単位など。  
boy, dog, desk, flower, hour, day, week, month など
- b** 集合名詞 …… いくつかの個体の集まった集団につけられた名称を表す名詞。  
family 「家族」, class 「学級」, crew 「乗組員」 など
- c** 固有名詞 …… 一人、一事物に限って用いられる固有の名称を表す名詞。常に大文字で書き始める。  
《人名》 …… John, Mary など  
《地名》 …… Europe, England, London など
- d** 物質名詞 …… 一定の形がないためそれ自体では数えられない物質の名称を表す名詞。  
《液体・気体》 …… water, air 「空気」 など  
《材料》 …… glass 「ガラス」, metal 「金属」, gold など  
《食品》 …… meat, butter, bread など
- e** 抽象名詞 …… 具体的な形をもたない抽象概念を表す名詞。  
happiness 「幸福」, truth 「真実」, peace 「平和」, freedom 「自由」, silence 「静寂」 など

## 派生語

- a** 形容詞 → 名詞 …… kind — kindness 「親切」, different — difference 「違い」, honest — honesty 「正直さ」
- b** 動詞 → 名詞 …… run — runner, mean — meaning, live — life, die — death, speak — speech, advise — advice 「助言」, decide — decision 「決定」, see — sight 「視覚」, know — knowledge 「知識」, please — pleasure 「喜び」
- c** 名詞 → 名詞 …… piano — pianist, friend — friendship 「友情」

## 可算名詞・不可算名詞

名詞は、数えられるもの(可算名詞)と数えられないもの(不可算名詞)に分けられる。

- a** 可算名詞 …… 普通名詞, (大部分の)集合名詞
- b** 不可算名詞 …… 固有名詞, 物質名詞, 抽象名詞, (一部分の)集合名詞

**注意** 同一の名詞でも可算, 不可算の両方に用いられるものがある。

paper 「紙」 → 物質名詞 / a paper 「新聞, レポート」 → 普通名詞

room 「余地」 → 抽象名詞 / a room 「部屋」 → 普通名詞

## 名詞の複数形

- a** (e)s を付ける
- ① 《-s, -sh, -ch, -x, -o》 glass — glasses, box — boxes, potato — potatoes  
**注意** piano — pianos, radio — radios, photo — photos
- ② 《子音字+y》 lady — ladies, baby — babies
- ③ 《-f, -fe》 knife — knives, leaf — leaves, life — lives  
**注意** roof — roofs, handkerchief — handkerchiefs  
 「ハンカチ」
- b** 不規則なもの man — men, woman — women, foot — feet, tooth — teeth, mouse — mice 「ねずみ」, goose — geese 「ガチョウ」, ox — oxen 「雄牛」  
**注意** 単複同形 …… fish, sheep 「羊」, deer 「鹿」, Japanese 「日本人」
- c** s で終わる複数形の名詞の所有格 …… アポストロフィ (') だけをつける。  
 a boys' high school 「男子高」, ten minutes' walk 「徒歩で10分の距離」
- d** 《a pair of + 複数形》(対をなすものを表す) …… a pair of glasses, two pairs of shoes
- e** 《every + 数詞 + 複数形》「…ごとに」 …… every three months 「3か月ごとに」

## 物質名詞の分量の表し方

- a** 容器を表す語を用いる場合  
 a cup of coffee [tea], a glass of milk [water], a spoonful of sugar [salt]
- b** 形状を表す語を用いる場合  
 a piece of paper [chalk], a sheet of paper, a loaf of bread

## 冠詞の注意すべき用法

- a** a[an] の注意すべき用法
- ① We are of an age. 「同じ(= the same)」
- ② We take three meals a day. 「…につき」
- ③ A Mr. Young is waiting for you. 「…という名の人」
- b** the の注意すべき用法
- ① ただ1つしかないものの前 …… The sun rises in the east.
- ② 《the + 形容詞》「…の人々」〔複数扱い〕 …… the rich (= rich people), the old (= old people)
- ③ 《the + 固有名詞》 …… 海洋, 川, 山脈, 船, 新聞, 雑誌, 家族など  
the Pacific 「太平洋」, the Thames 「テムズ川」, the Rockies 「ロッキー山脈」,  
the Asahi 「朝日新聞」, the Japanese 「日本国民」, the Tamuras 「田村家の人々」

## 練 成 問 題

**1** 次の名詞の複数形を書きなさい。

- |                                             |                                                |                                             |
|---------------------------------------------|------------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------|
| <input type="checkbox"/> (1) bus .....      | <input type="checkbox"/> (2) class .....       | <input type="checkbox"/> (3) glass .....    |
| <input type="checkbox"/> (4) box .....      | <input type="checkbox"/> (5) fox .....         | <input type="checkbox"/> (6) dish .....     |
| <input type="checkbox"/> (7) church .....   | <input type="checkbox"/> (8) bench .....       | <input type="checkbox"/> (9) watch .....    |
| <input type="checkbox"/> (10) stomach ..... | <input type="checkbox"/> (11) baby .....       | <input type="checkbox"/> (12) country ..... |
| <input type="checkbox"/> (13) lady .....    | <input type="checkbox"/> (14) dictionary ..... | <input type="checkbox"/> (15) day .....     |
| <input type="checkbox"/> (16) monkey .....  | <input type="checkbox"/> (17) hero .....       | <input type="checkbox"/> (18) tomato .....  |
| <input type="checkbox"/> (19) photo .....   | <input type="checkbox"/> (20) radio .....      |                                             |

語句

(10) 胃 (発音注意)

**2** 次の名詞の複数形を書きなさい。

- |                                          |                                                 |                                         |
|------------------------------------------|-------------------------------------------------|-----------------------------------------|
| <input type="checkbox"/> (1) leaf .....  | <input type="checkbox"/> (2) knife .....        | <input type="checkbox"/> (3) life ..... |
| <input type="checkbox"/> (4) thief ..... | <input type="checkbox"/> (5) wife .....         | <input type="checkbox"/> (6) wolf ..... |
| <input type="checkbox"/> (7) roof .....  | <input type="checkbox"/> (8) handkerchief ..... |                                         |

語句

(4) どろぼう

**3** 次の名詞の複数形を書きなさい。

- |                                           |                                              |                                             |
|-------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------|---------------------------------------------|
| <input type="checkbox"/> (1) foot .....   | <input type="checkbox"/> (2) tooth .....     | <input type="checkbox"/> (3) goose .....    |
| <input type="checkbox"/> (4) mouse .....  | <input type="checkbox"/> (5) woman .....     | <input type="checkbox"/> (6) man .....      |
| <input type="checkbox"/> (7) ox .....     | <input type="checkbox"/> (8) child .....     | <input type="checkbox"/> (9) deer .....     |
| <input type="checkbox"/> (10) sheep ..... | <input type="checkbox"/> (11) Japanese ..... | <input type="checkbox"/> (12) Chinese ..... |

語句

(3) ガチョウ (11) 日本人 (12) 中国人

**4** 《物質名詞の分量などの表し方》 次の表現を日本語に直しなさい。また、(1)にならって.....を補いなさい。

- |                                                   |     |                      |
|---------------------------------------------------|-----|----------------------|
| <input type="checkbox"/> (1) a cup of coffee      | ( ) | → two cups of coffee |
| <input type="checkbox"/> (2) a piece of chalk     | ( ) | → two ..... of chalk |
| <input type="checkbox"/> (3) a glass of milk      | ( ) | → two ..... of milk  |
| <input type="checkbox"/> (4) a spoonful of sugar  | ( ) | → two ..... of sugar |
| <input type="checkbox"/> (5) a bottle of beer     | ( ) | → two ..... of beer  |
| <input type="checkbox"/> (6) a slice of bread     | ( ) | → two ..... of bread |
| <input type="checkbox"/> (7) a sheet of paper     | ( ) | → two ..... of paper |
| <input type="checkbox"/> (8) a jar of jam         | ( ) | → two ..... of jam   |
| <input type="checkbox"/> (9) a bucketful of water | ( ) | → two ..... of water |
| <input type="checkbox"/> (10) a loaf of bread     | ( ) | → two ..... of bread |
| <input type="checkbox"/> (11) a pair of shoes     | ( ) | → two ..... of shoes |

5 《名詞の複数形》 次の \_\_\_\_\_ に、あとの( )内の語を適当な形に直して書きなさい。ただし、そのままの形でよい場合もあります。

- (1) Many \_\_\_\_\_ are sold at the store. ( dictionary )
- (2) There are many \_\_\_\_\_ on the table. ( box )
- (3) How many \_\_\_\_\_ did you have yesterday? ( class )
- (4) Chicago is one of the biggest \_\_\_\_\_ in the United States. ( city )
- (5) Two \_\_\_\_\_ live in this building. ( family )
- (6) He told us a lot of good \_\_\_\_\_ . ( story )
- (7) There are two \_\_\_\_\_ on the desk. ( knife )
- (8) In autumn some \_\_\_\_\_ turn yellow. ( leaf ) 〈関西学院〉
- (9) How many \_\_\_\_\_ are there in the room? ( man )
- (10) There were a few \_\_\_\_\_ in the room. ( woman )
- \*  (11) Do you clean your \_\_\_\_\_ every morning? ( tooth ) 〈明治大学付属明治〉
- (12) There are many cows and \_\_\_\_\_ in the meadow. ( ox )
- \*  (13) There are three \_\_\_\_\_ in the pond. ( goose ) 〈慶應義塾〉
- \*  (14) I saw a lot of \_\_\_\_\_ in the plane. ( Japanese )
- (15) The man has some \_\_\_\_\_ and cows. ( sheep )
- \*  (16) He is five \_\_\_\_\_ and six inches tall. ( foot )
- (17) Rebecca had two cheese \_\_\_\_\_ for lunch. ( sandwich ) 〈法政大学第一〉
- \*  (18) That's a \_\_\_\_\_ high school. ( girls ) 〈関西学院〉
- (19) It was about two \_\_\_\_\_ walk from the station. ( hours )
- \*  (20) Our uncle comes to visit us every three \_\_\_\_\_ . ( month )

語句

(4) Chicago シカゴ (12) meadow 牧草地 (13) pond 池

6 《冠詞の注意すべき用法》 次の英文を日本語に直しなさい。

- \*  (1) My cousin and I are of an age.  
( \_\_\_\_\_ )
- \*  (2) These pencils are 1000 yen a dozen.  
( \_\_\_\_\_ )
- \*  (3) A Mr. Green came to see you when you were out.  
( \_\_\_\_\_ )
- (4) The earth goes around the sun.  
( \_\_\_\_\_ )
- \*  (5) Be kind to the old.  
( \_\_\_\_\_ )
- (6) The Japanese are diligent.  
( \_\_\_\_\_ )

語句

(2) dozen ダース (6) diligent 勤勉な

# 発展問題

**1** 次の C と D の関係が A と B の関係と同じになるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

	A	B	C	D	
<input type="checkbox"/>	(1) men	men's	boys	.....	
<input type="checkbox"/>	(2) hand	hands	.....	feet	〈法政大学第一〉
<input type="checkbox"/>	(3) bike	bikes	.....	lives	
<input type="checkbox"/>	(4) invite	invitation	begin	.....	〈中央大学附属〉
<input type="checkbox"/>	(5) discover	discovery	succeed	.....	〈同志社国際〉
<input type="checkbox"/>	(6) free	freedom	ill	.....	
<input type="checkbox"/>	(7) true	truth	absent	.....	
* <input type="checkbox"/>	(8) die	death	please	.....	〈滝〉
<input type="checkbox"/>	(9) piano	pianist	science	.....	〈同志社国際〉
* <input type="checkbox"/>	(10) work	worker	visit	.....	

**2** 次の( )に入る最も適当な語(句)をそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

- \* (1) I want ( ) of paper. 〈日本大学第一〉  
 ア a pair    イ a few    ウ a slice    エ a piece [ ]
- (2) I want a new ( ) of gloves for going to school. [ ]  
 ア piece    イ pair    ウ cup    エ glass
- (3) I sometimes have a piece of cake and ( ) coffee after dinner. 〈駒込〉  
 ア a cup    イ a few    ウ any    エ some [ ]
- \* (4) I have to write ( ) paper for our history class by the end of this week. 〈法政大学第一〉  
 ア a    イ a piece of    ウ many    エ some [ ]

**3** 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) わたしは日本語をとともうまく話すアメリカ人に会った。 〈成城学園〉  
 I met an American who was a very ..... of Japanese.
- \* (2) わたしは週に2回部屋の掃除をします。  
 I clean my room .....
- \* (3) 金持ちは幸せであるとは限りません。  
 ..... rich ..... not always happy.
- (4) 信濃川は日本で1番長い川です。  
 ..... Shinano is the longest of all the ..... in Japan.
- (5) わたしたちは彼女の事務所を見つけるのに少し苦労した。 〈開成〉  
 We had some ..... finding her office.
- \* (6) このサラダにはトマトが少し入っています。  
 There is ..... in this salad.

4 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) (a) My sister plays the violin very well. 〈立教新座〉  
(b) My sister is a .....
- \*  (2) (a) It takes ten minutes to walk from here to the station.  
(b) It's ten ..... walk from here to the station.
- (3) (a) Your answer is much different from mine. 〈早稲田実業〉  
(b) There is a great ..... your answer and mine.
- (4) (a) I watched television for thirty minutes. 〈高知学芸〉  
(b) I watched television for ..... an .....
- (5) (a) Many people from foreign countries visit Japan every year.  
(b) Many ..... visit Japan every year.
- (6) (a) While she was staying in Japan, she ate *takoyaki*. 〈関西学院〉  
(b) ..... her ..... in Japan, she ate *takoyaki*.
- (7) (a) He does not know much about computers. 〈成蹊〉  
(b) His ..... of computers is not enough.
- \*  (8) (a) We were all surprised to hear that he was dead. 〈慶應義塾〉  
(b) The ..... of his ..... surprised ..... all.
- (9) (a) Mai is a very friendly girl. 〈慶應義塾女子〉  
(b) Mai can easily make ..... with other people.
- (10) (a) Can you tell me what time he will arrive?  
(b) Can you tell me the time of his ..... ?

5 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、( )内の語句を並べかえなさい。

- (1) わたしはそんなにわくわくする映画を見たことがない。〔1語不足〕 〈獨協埼玉〉  
( movie / I / such / never / exciting / seen / have ).  
.....
- (2) あなたにコーヒーを持ってきてあげましょうか。  
( you / coffee / shall / of / cup / I / a / bring )?  
.....
- \*  (3) オリンピックは4年に1度開催されます。  
( are / every / four / Games / held / Olympic / the / years ).  
.....
- (4) わたしは彼の突然の訪問にとっても驚きました。  
( me / surprise / was / to / his / great / visit / a / sudden ).  
.....
- \*  (5) 彼の部屋には何百冊もの本があります。  
( of / are / room / hundreds / his / books / there / in ).  
.....

# 16 代名詞

## 代名詞の種類

名詞の代わりに用いる語を代名詞という。前に出た名詞の繰り返しを避けるために用いることが多いが、特定の名詞ではなく、ばくぜんとした不特定のものや、文のある部分を指して用いられることもある。

- a** 人称代名詞 …… 話者, 相手, 第三者を示す代名詞(所有代名詞, 再帰代名詞を含む)
- b** 指示代名詞 …… 特定の物, 人, 事柄を指し示す代名詞(this, that など)
- c** 不定代名詞 …… 不特定の物, 人, 事柄を指し示す代名詞(one, some, any など)

## 人称代名詞の注意すべき用法

### 1 it の特別用法

- a** 《時》, 《距離》, 《天候》, 《寒暖》, 《明暗》などを述べる文の主語
  - ① It is three years since he died.
  - ② How far is it from here to the library?
- b** 形式主語 …… 後続する不定詞や that 節を代表して仮の主語として用いる。
  - ① It is easy for him to solve such a problem.
  - ② It took me two hours to finish the work.
  - ③ It is certain that he will succeed.
  - ④ It is said that she has three children. (= They say that she has three children.)

**注意** 《It takes + (人) + 時間 + to ~.》「(一が) ~するのに [時間が] …かかる。」(②),  
 《It costs + (人) + 金額 + to ~.》「(一が) ~するのに [お金が] …かかる。」

- c** 形式目的語 …… 後続する不定詞などを代表して仮の目的語として用いる。  
 I think it difficult to do so.

### 2 再帰代名詞(-self, -selves)

- a** 再帰用法 …… 主語が自分自身を目的語とする場合
  - ① She killed herself.
  - ② Please introduce yourself.
- b** 強調用法 …… 主語, 補語, 目的語などを強調する場合  
 I did it myself. [I myself did it.] [主語の強調]
- c** 《前置詞 + 再帰代名詞》
  - ① by oneself 「独力で, ひとりぼっちで」
  - ② for oneself 「自分で, 自分のために」
- d** 再帰代名詞を含む慣用表現
  - ① enjoy oneself 「楽しむ」
  - ② help oneself to … 「…を自由にとって食べる」

## 指示代名詞の注意すべき用法

名詞の繰り返しを避ける **that**[**those**] (that[those] of … 「…のそれ」の形で用いることが多い)

- ① The population of China is larger than **that of** Japan. [that = the population]
- ② Her eyes are like **those of** her mother. [those = the eyes]

**注意** 比較しているのはそれぞれ「人口」、「目」なので, than Japan, like her mother とするのは誤り。

## 不定代名詞の注意すべき用法・種類

**a** 前出の名詞を受ける **one**

- ① I have no car. Do you have **one**? [one = a car] (不特定なので it は不可)
- ② I have three dogs; a black **one** and two white **ones**.

**注意** 修飾語を伴う場合は, 単数, 複数 of のいずれにも用いられる(②)。

**b** **other** 「他の人[もの]」(複数形 others)

- ① I have two bags. **One** is black and **the other** is white.
- ② Don't speak to **others** during the exam.

**注意** one ~ the other … 「(2つのうち)一方は~, 他方は…」(①), some ~ others … 「~のものもあれば, …のものもある」, the others 「他の全部」。others は単独で用いると「他人」の意味(②)。

**c** **another** 「もう1人[もう1つ]」

- ① I don't like this shirt. Show me **another**.
- ② Knowing is **one** thing; doing is quite **another**.

**注意** A is one thing, B is another. 「AとBは別のことだ。」(②)

**d** **each** 「めいめい, それぞれ」(つねに単数扱い)

**Each** of the students has a desk and a chair.

**e** **either** 「2人[2つ]のうちのどちらか1人[1つ]」(単数扱い)

I will use **either** of the two computers.

**f** **neither** 「2人[2つ]とも…ない」(単数扱い)

**Neither** of us succeeded.

**g** **both** 「2人[2つ]の両方とも」(つねに複数扱い)

**Both** of you are wrong.

**h** **all** 「すべての人[もの]」(「すべての人」を意味する場合は複数扱い, 「すべてのもの」を意味する場合は単数扱い)

**All** you have to do is to do your best.

**i** **some** 「いく人かの人[いくつかのもの]」

**Some** of my friends live in Australia.

## 練 成 問 題

**1** 《it の特別用法》 次の文を it を使って書きかえなさい。

\*  (1) To sleep well is good for the health.  
.....

(2) This river is dangerous to swim in.  
.....

\*  (3) She was foolish to make such a mistake.  
.....

\*  (4) I found that to understand him was difficult.  
.....

(5) I think that to eat too much is bad.  
.....

**2** 《不定代名詞の用法》 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、..... に適する語を書きなさい。

\*  (1) 万年筆がほしいのですか。— はい、ほしいです。 〈昭和学院秀英〉  
Do you want a fountain pen? — Yes, I want .....

\*  (2) この帽子はよくない。もう 1 つ見せてください。 〈同志社〉  
This hat isn't good. Show me .....

(3) わたしたちはそれぞれ自分の義務を持っています。  
..... of us has his own duty.

\*  (4) わたしたちはすべて幸せを求めています。  
..... of us want happiness.

(5) 彼らの 2 人とも欠席しました。  
..... of them ..... absent.

\*  (6) 君たちのうちのどちらかがすぐに行かなければなりません。  
..... of you has to go at once.

\*  (7) 彼らの 2 人ともその事実を知りませんでした。  
..... of them knew the fact.

(8) わたしはそれらをすべて知っているわけではありません。  
I ..... know ..... of them.

\*  (9) 彼の両親の 2 人ともいないわけではありません。  
..... of his parents are not dead.

(10) あるものは同意し、あるものは同意しません。  
..... agree but ..... do not.

(11) このクラスの少年はみな野球が好きです。  
..... boy in this class ..... baseball.

語句

(1) 万年筆 fountain pen (3) 義務 duty (7) 事実 fact (10) 同意する agree

3 次の( )に入る最も適当な語(句)をそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

- \*  (1) I think ( ) will be rainy tomorrow.  
 ア where イ when ウ it エ if [ ]
- (2) The bird sang ( ) happy song. (広島大学附属)  
 ア it イ its ウ it's [ ]
- \*  (3) He found ( ) difficult to walk in such a heavy rain. (中央大学附属)  
 ア that イ how ウ it エ out [ ]
- (4) Peter is ( ). (学習院)  
 ア a my old friend イ an old friend of me [ ]  
 ウ an old friend of mine エ an old my friend
- \*  (5) Can I help you with that? — No, thanks. I want to do it ( ) myself. (城北)  
 ア to イ for ウ in エ at [ ]
- \*  (6) Please help ( ) to wine.  
 ア myself イ yourself ウ himself エ herself [ ]
- \*  (7) The population of Osaka is much larger than ( ) of my hometown. (江戸川学園取手)  
 ア it イ one ウ that エ this [ ]
- \*  (8) The apples in this box are better than ( ) in that box. (城北)  
 ア these イ those ウ ones エ the others [ ]
- (9) I have a bicycle. Do you have ( )? (日本大学)  
 ア other イ the other ウ one エ another [ ]
- (10) You can borrow an umbrella if you need ( ). (東大寺学園)  
 ア some イ any ウ one エ this [ ]
- (11) I don't like this hat. Show me a blue ( ). (関西学院)  
 ア it イ something ウ one [ ]
- \*  (12) I want some oranges. Give me these big ( ). (明治学院)  
 ア one イ them ウ some エ ones [ ]
- (13) This dress is too small for me. Show me ( ). (青山学院)  
 ア one イ other ウ another エ it [ ]
- \*  (14) To know is one thing, to teach is ( ). (大阪星光学院)  
 ア another イ that ウ the other エ the second [ ]
- \*  (15) My family has two cars: one is black and ( ) is blue.  
 ア another イ the others ウ the other エ one [ ]
- \*  (16) She has five brothers: one is a doctor and ( ) are all teachers. (桐朋)  
 ア another イ others ウ the others エ the other [ ]
- \*  (17) ( ) of them has an English dictionary.  
 ア Each イ Both ウ Some エ Many [ ]
- (18) If nothing changes, then ( ) will always be the same. (青山学院)  
 ア everything イ anything ウ something エ nothing [ ]

## 発展問題

1 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) 彼はいつも何か新しいことをやっています。 〈郁文館〉  
He always tries .....
- (2) この国の気候はイングランドの気候とよく似ている。 〈ラ・サール〉  
The climate of this land is like ..... of England.
- (3) 駅まで行くのにどのくらいかかりますか。 〈開成〉  
How long ..... to go to the station?
- \*  (4) 東京から大阪までどのくらいの距離がありますか。  
..... from Tokyo to Osaka?
- (5) わたしには新しい時計が1つと古い時計が2つあります。すべて貴重です。  
I have a new watch and two old ..... of them .....  
precious.
- (6) すみません、電話ボックスを探しているのですが、この近くにありませんか。 〈広島大学附属〉  
Excuse me, but I'm looking for a phone box. Is there .....  
..... ?
- (7) バラの花が2本あります。1本は白で、もう1本は赤です。  
There are two roses. .... is white and the ..... is red.
- \*  (8) わたしたちの庭には赤い花もあれば黄色い花もある。 〈明治大学付属明治〉  
In our garden, some flowers are red and ..... are yellow.
- \*  (9) 彼らは2人とも英語が読めません。  
..... of them can read English.
- \*  (10) 彼は独力でこの箱を作りました。  
He made this box .....
- \*  (11) 彼らは自殺しようとしてしました。  
They tried to .....
- (12) わたしは新しいのよりこの古い靴が好きです。 〈学習院〉  
I like these old shoes better than the new .....
- \*  (13) 彼はたいへん親切な人だそうです。 〈学習院〉  
..... that he is a very kind man.
- \*  (14) もしお金をお持ちでしたら、いくらか貸してください。  
If you have ..... money with you, please lend me .....
- (15) 何事が起こるかだれにもわからない。 〈開成〉  
..... what may happen.
- Ⓛ  (16) きょうの君はいつもと違うよ。 〈開成〉  
You are not ..... today.

語句

(2) 気候 climate (5) 貴重な precious

**2** 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) (a) Those books belong to me.  
(b) Those books are .....
- (2) (a) He did not say anything to me. 〈名古屋大学教育学部附属〉  
(b) He said ..... to me.
- \*  (3) (a) We have a lot of snow around here. 〈早稲田〉  
(b) ..... a lot around here.
- \*  (4) (a) We had a good time at the party. 〈東京学芸大学附属〉  
(b) We ..... ourselves at the party.
- \*  (5) (a) I finished the work in five days. 〈久留米大学附設〉  
(b) It ..... five days to finish the work.
- \*  (6) (a) The price of this book was ten dollars five years ago.  
(b) ..... me ten dollars to buy this book five years ago.
- (7) (a) They say that the school is famous.  
(b) ..... said that the school is famous.
- (8) (a) I have nothing more to say. 〈成蹊〉  
(b) That is ..... I have to say.
- \*  (9) (a) All the children in my family like soccer. 〈日本大学〉  
(b) Every ..... in my family ..... soccer.
- (10) (a) Who can master English without working hard? 〈青山学院〉  
(b) ..... master English without working hard.

**3** 次の日本語を英語に直しなさい。

- (1) 6時には暗くなります。 〈学習院〉  
.....
- (2) 雨が降りそうです。  
.....
- (3) ここから駅までバスで15分かかります。  
.....
- (4) わたしはこの手紙を書くのに1時間かかりました。  
.....
- \*  (5) みなさんの中には、英語が得意な人もいれば、苦手な人もいます。 〈東大寺学園〉  
.....
- (6) 彼には2人の息子がいて、一方は教師で他方は医者です。  
.....
- (7) 他人の悪口を言ってはいけません。  
.....

語句

(2) ...になりそうだ look like ... (7) ...の悪口を言う speak ill of ...

## 形容詞の種類と用法

形容詞は、人や物の性質・状態、あるいは数や量を表す語で、名詞に直接付けて用いる用法(限定用法)と動詞の補語として用いる用法(叙述用法)がある。

## 1 性質・状態を表す形容詞

- ① Mike is a **kind** boy. [限定用法] (名詞 boy を修飾)  
 ② You look **beautiful** in the kimono. [叙述用法] (主格補語)  
 ③ You must keep your room **clean**. [叙述用法] (目的格補語)

## 2 数や量を表す形容詞

## a 基数詞・序数詞

- ① I have **two** brothers.  
 ② Jack is in the **eighth** grade.

## b ばくぜんとした数や量を表す形容詞

- ① 数を表すもの(可算名詞に用いる)…… **many**, (a) **few**  
 a **Many** students are playing in the school yard.  
 b I have **a few** friends in Osaka.  
 c I have **few** friends in Osaka.  
 ② 量を表すもの(不可算名詞に用いる)…… **much**, (a) **little**  
 a Did you have **much** rain last week?  
 b There is **a little** water in the bottle.  
 c There is **little** water in the bottle.  
 ③ 数・量の両方に用いられるもの…… **some[any]**, **no**  
 a There are **some** students there. [数]  
 b There is **some** water in the glass. [量]  
 c I have **no** friends in this town. [数]  
 d We had **no** rain last week. [量]

**比較** few, little は、a を付けると「少しはある」(肯定的)(① — **b**, ② — **b**)、a を付けないと「少ししかない、ほとんどない」(否定的)(① — **c**, ② — **c**)という意味を表す。

## c 数・量を表す形容詞の言い換え

- ① There were **a lot of**[lots of / plenty of] people in the park. [many の言い換え]  
 ② We had **a lot of**[lots of / plenty of] rain last week. [much の言い換え]  
 ③ I had **no** money with me then. [no = not ... any]  
 = I did **not** have **any** money with me then.

**注意** a lot of, lots of, plenty of は、可算名詞(①)と不可算名詞(②)のどちらにも用いることができる。

☆ **Too many cooks spoil the broth.**

(料理人が多すぎるとスープが台なしになる→船頭多くして船山に上る)

## 副詞の種類と用法

副詞は、《時》、《場所》、《様態》、《頻度》、《程度》などの意味を表し、主として動詞、形容詞、他の副詞などを修飾する。

**a** 《時》を表す副詞 …… now, then, yesterday, already, yet, soon など。

- ① I have **already** had lunch.
- ② He hasn't returned **yet**.

**b** 《場所》を表す副詞 …… here, there など。

She has lived **here** for three years.

**注意** 場所と時を表す副詞が並ぶときは、《場所+時》の順。

**c** 《様態》を表す副詞 …… well, hard, quickly, carefully など。

- ① Mary cooks very **well**.
- ② He arrived here **safely** yesterday.

**注意** 場所と時を表す副詞に様態を表す副詞が加わると、ふつう《場所+様態+時》の順(②)。

**d** 《頻度》を表す副詞 …… always, often, sometimes など。

- ① How **often** do you go to the shop? — Once or twice a week.
- ② **a** He **always** comes on time.
- b** He doesn't **always** come on time.

**注意** always や necessarily を否定文で用いると、「必ずしも～とは限らない」(部分否定)という意味を表す(②—**b**)。

**e** 《程度》を表す副詞 …… very, much, almost, enough など。

- ① He plays tennis **very** well.
- ② She plays the piano **much** better than I.
- ③ **Almost** all the students in our class walk to school.  
(= Most (of the) students in our class walk to school.)
- ④ He was kind **enough** to show me the way to the station.

**注意** very は原級を強め(①)、much は比較級を強める(②)。

## 注意すべき副詞の用法

**too** 「(肯定文を受けて)…もまた」と、**either** 「(否定文を受けて)…もまた(～ない)」

- ① I like baseball. — I do[Me], **too**. (= **So do I**.)
- ② I can't speak English well. — I can't[Me], **either**. (= **Neither[Nor] can I**.)

**注意** (i) 《So do[does / did / 助動詞] + S.》は肯定文を受けて「Sもそうだ。」の意味を表す(①)。  
(ii) 《Neither[Nor] do[does / did / 助動詞] + S.》は否定文を受けて「Sもそうでない。」の意味を表す(②)。

## 練成問題

**1** 次の( )に入る最も適当な語(句)をそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

- (1) Sunday is the first day of the week. Wednesday is the ( ) day.  
 ア second イ third ウ fourth エ fifth [ ]
- \*  (2) The girl has ( ) flowers in her hands.  
 ア a few イ any ウ a little エ much [ ]
- (3) We didn't have ( ) snow here this winter.  
 ア many イ some ウ a few エ much [ ]
- \*  (4) I have ( ) friends in Australia.  
 ア much イ any ウ a little エ some [ ]
- (5) It'll be ( ) fun to camp there.  
 ア too many イ a lot of ウ a few [ ]
- (6) I have ( ) money with me. 〈筑波大学附属〉  
 ア many イ no ウ few エ any [ ]
- (7) Last year there were ( ) sunny days in June. 〈金沢大学教育学部附属〉  
 ア little イ few ウ much エ too [ ]
- (8) Hiroko speaks ( ) English.  
 ア any イ many ウ a few エ a little [ ]
- (9) There aren't ( ) easy ways to learn a foreign language. 〈中央大学附属杉並〉  
 ア little イ no ウ any エ some [ ]
- (10) Call me at once if you need ( ) help. 〈早稲田実業〉  
 ア many イ yet ウ few エ any [ ]
- \*  (11) How ( ) hours have you been in this restaurant? 〈修道〉  
 ア long イ many ウ great エ much [ ]
- \*  (12) How ( ) money do you have now? 〈高知学芸〉  
 ア many イ some ウ any エ much [ ]
- \*  (13) I have not read today's paper ( ). 〈筑波大学附属〉  
 ア still イ yet ウ already [ ]
- \*  (14) The exam was ( ) difficult for me to pass.  
 ア as イ so ウ too エ such [ ]
- (15) This novel is ( ) more difficult than that one. 〈日本大学習志野〉  
 ア very イ so ウ much エ as [ ]
- \*  (16) How ( ) is it from here to Ueno Station? — It is ten minutes' walk.  
 ア many イ much ウ far エ long [ ]
- \*  (17) How ( ) has he stayed in Hokkaido?  
 ア long イ many ウ much エ far [ ]

語句

(13) paper 新聞 (15) novel 小説

2 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) a My mother cooks very well. 〈東京学芸大学附属〉  
b My mother is a .....
- \*  (2) a Mr. Smith drives very carefully. 〈慶應義塾〉  
b Mr. Smith is a very .....
- (3) a He is good at driving a car. 〈甲陽学院〉  
b He ..... a car .....
- \*  (4) a I have no money with me.  
b I ..... have ..... money with me.
- (5) a It didn't rain a lot here last year. 〈穎明館〉  
b ..... didn't have ..... rain here last year.
- \*  (6) a We have almost no snow in Kochi. 〈土佐塾〉  
b We have ..... snow in Kochi.
- (7) a Father and I didn't catch any fish.  
b Father and I ..... fish.

3 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) どの少年にも何かよいところがあるものです。 〈広島大学附属〉  
Every boy ..... in him.
- \*  (2) あしたから休みが始まります。 〈東京工業大学附属〉  
Tomorrow is the ..... day of the vacation.
- (3) りんごを2, 3個とバターを少しく下さい。  
Please give me a ..... apples and a ..... butter.
- \*  (4) 財布の中にお金が少しありました。 〈慶應義塾〉  
There ..... money in the purse.
- \*  (5) その公園へ行く人はわずかしきません。  
..... people go to the park.

語句

(4) 財布 purse

4 次の英文にあとの( )内の語を入れるとすれば、どこが適当か。 /で示しなさい。

- \*  (1) The rocket flies faster than the plane. ( much ) 〈同志社〉  
 (2) Bill has washed the car. ( just )  
\*  (3) Please give me something to drink. ( hot )  
 (4) She is a good girl. ( such )  
 (5) Jane does not go to church on Sunday. ( always )  
\*  (6) All the girls are present. ( almost )  
\*  (7) John came home last night. ( late )

語句

(1) rocket ロケット (6) present 出席して

# 発展問題

**1** 次の( )に入る最も適当な語(句)をそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

- \*  (1) We bought ( ) food at the store. 〈学習院〉  
 ア a few    イ very few    ウ plenty of    エ many 〔    〕
- (2) My father came ( ). 〔    〕  
 ア home late last night    イ late home last night  
 ウ last night home late    エ last night late home
- (3) He doesn't like it. I don't like it, ( ). 〈関西学院〉  
 ア also    イ either    ウ too 〔    〕
- (4) John can speak French. — So ( ). 〈城北〉  
 ア can Mary    イ Mary can    ウ does Mary    エ can John 〔    〕
- \*  (5) A: I must be going home now. Thank you for everything. 〈東明館〉  
 B: Well, we had a good time. 〔    〕  
 A: ( ) I really enjoyed myself.  
 ア Just fine.    イ Neither did I.    ウ So I did.    エ So did I.
- (6) I asked the students a lot of questions about Japanese history. But ( ) could answer. 〈中央大学附属〉  
 ア any    イ other    ウ little    エ few 〔    〕
- \*  (7) He lost his homework and there is ( ) hope of finding it before class. 〈東大寺学園〉  
 ア little    イ many    ウ few    エ lots 〔    〕
- \*  (8) As he was careful, he made ( ) mistakes. 〔    〕  
 ア a few    イ few    ウ a little    エ little
- (9) We have to hurry. We have ( ) time. 〈青雲〉  
 ア few    イ little    ウ much    エ many 〔    〕
- (10) I don't want my daughter to spend too ( ) time watching TV. 〔    〕  
 ア many    イ much    ウ few    エ little
- (11) How ( ) do you talk to her on the phone? — I call her every day. 〈中央大学附属〉  
 ア often    イ much    ウ long    エ many    オ far 〔    〕
- \*  (12) Why is she so ( ) when she drives a car? 〈浦和明の星女子〉  
 ア careless    イ carelessly 〔    〕
- (13) He looked quite ( ). 〈海城〉  
 ア happy    イ happily    ウ happiness 〔    〕
- (14) Toshio made ( ) mistakes on the test than Yoshiki. 〈栄東〉  
 ア little    イ some    ウ many    エ fewer 〔    〕
- \*  (15) ( ) people believe that exercise is good for health. 〈滝〉  
 ア Most    イ Much    ウ Almost    エ Every 〔    〕

語句

(13) quite かなり    (15) exercise 運動

2 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、\_\_\_\_\_に適する語を書きなさい。

- \*  (1) (a) Mary used to rise early. 〈修道〉  
(b) Mary was an \_\_\_\_\_.
- \*  (2) (a) Sadao has never been to Osaka before.  
(b) This is Sadao's \_\_\_\_\_ trip to Osaka.
- \*  (3) (a) I like math very much. 〈清風南海〉  
(b) Math is \_\_\_\_\_ subject.
- (4) (a) She is usually busy, but sometimes free. 〈芝浦工大附属〉  
(b) She is not \_\_\_\_\_ busy.
- (5) (a) I want one more cup of coffee. 〈立命館〉  
(b) I want \_\_\_\_\_ cup of coffee.
- (6) (a) Tom drove his car with care. 〈明治大学付属明治〉  
(b) Tom drove his car \_\_\_\_\_.
- \*  (7) (a) Neither you nor I am rich.  
(b) You are not rich. I am not rich, \_\_\_\_\_.
- (8) (a) How often do you go to the movies in a month? 〈学習院〉  
(b) How \_\_\_\_\_ do you go to the movies in a month?

3 次の日本文に合う英文になるように、\_\_\_\_\_に適する語を書きなさい。

- \*  (1) 彼女も車の運転ができません。 〈明治大学付属明治〉  
She \_\_\_\_\_ drive a car, \_\_\_\_\_.
- (2) ビルもトムも日本語が話せません。 〈近畿大学附属〉  
Bill can't speak Japanese, and \_\_\_\_\_, \_\_\_\_\_.
- (3) 彼はスペイン語が話せる。彼の友達も話せる。 〈開成〉  
He can speak Spanish. \_\_\_\_\_ can his friend.
- \*  (4) オリンピックは4年ごとに行われます。 〈早稲田実業〉  
The Olympic Games are held \_\_\_\_\_ four years.
- \*  (5) こんなやさしい問いにはどんな少年も答えられます。 〈学習院〉  
\_\_\_\_\_ boy can answer \_\_\_\_\_ question.
- (6) 彼らは月曜日に必ずしもここへ来るとは限りません。 〈青山学院〉  
They \_\_\_\_\_ come here on Monday.
- (7) その質問に答えられた生徒はほとんどいませんでした。  
\_\_\_\_\_ students \_\_\_\_\_ answer the question.
- (8) われわれのうちで、その問題をとけるものはほとんどいなかった。 〈ラ・サール〉  
Very \_\_\_\_\_ could solve the problem.
- ☛  (9) コップにはほとんど水が残っていません。 〈早稲田大学高等学院〉  
There is \_\_\_\_\_ water \_\_\_\_\_ in the glass.

4 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、( )内の語句を並べかえなさい。

- (1) わたしは砂糖を少しと卵を少しほしい。 [1語不要] 〈日本大学〉  
( a little / a few / I / eggs / want / sugar / and / sugars ).
- .....
- \*  (2) 塩分を取り過ぎると体によくないですよ。 [1語不要] 〈東京工業大学附属〉  
( salt / good / much / for / too / take / not / is ) your health.
- .....
- (3) 彼はいつも学校に遅刻しているわけではありません。  
He ( not / for / school / late / is / always ).
- .....
- \*  (4) あなたは週にどれくらいテニスをしますか。 [1語不足]  
( week / you / in / how / play / a / tennis / do )?
- .....
- ▶  (5) 花瓶にはほとんど水が残っていなかった。 [1語不足] 〈学習院〉  
( vase / left / was / there / water / the / in ).
- .....
- ▶  (6) 最初にテストを終える生徒が必ずしも最高点を取るとは限らない。 [1語不要] 〈慶應義塾志木〉  
( first / always / necessary / the student / finishes / get / the exam / who / doesn't / the best marks ).

語句

(6) 最高点 the best marks

5 次の日本語を英語に直しなさい。

- (1) 今年の6月は雨が少なかった。 〈修道〉
- .....
- (2) この冬は2か月以上も雨がほとんど降っていません。
- .....
- (3) このクラスのほとんどの生徒は外国へ行ったことはありません。
- .....
- (4) どの生徒もその試験に合格できませんでした。
- .....
- (5) わたしたちのクラスの女の子はだれもみんな音楽が好きです。 〈学習院〉
- .....
- \*  (6) 金持ちがいつも幸福であるとは限りません。
- .....
- (7) あなたがこれらの種類の切手を手に入れるのはいつもやさしいというわけではない。 〈ラ・サール〉

語句

(3) 外国へ abroad

## 形容詞・副詞を含む連語

- |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                         |                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                                      |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|
| <p><input type="checkbox"/> ① <b>be absent from</b> … / <b>be present at</b> …<br/>I was absent from school today.</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> ② <b>be afraid of</b> …<br/>Don't be afraid of making mistakes.</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> ③ <b>be[get] angry with</b> 十人[at + 事物]<br/>I'm angry with him for being late.</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> ④ <b>be aware of</b> …<br/>He is not aware of his faults.</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> ⑤ <b>be careful of[about]</b> …<br/>My father is very careful of his health.</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> ⑥ <b>be different from</b> …<br/>My opinion is different from yours.</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> ⑦ <b>be due to</b> …<br/>The accident was due to his carelessness.</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> ⑧ <b>be eager to</b> ~<br/>She is eager to go to Hokkaido.</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> ⑨ <b>be famous for</b> …<br/>Kyoto is famous for its old temples.</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> ⑩ <b>be fond of</b> …<br/>My sister is fond of cooking.</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> ⑪ <b>be full of</b> …<br/>The room was full of children.</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> ⑫ <b>be good at</b> … / <b>be poor at</b> …<br/>He is good at speaking English.</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> ⑬ <b>be late for</b> … / <b>be in time for</b> …<br/>You must not be late for school.</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> ⑭ <b>be proud of</b> …<br/>He is proud of his father.</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> ⑮ <b>be ready to</b> ~<br/>① Are you ready to start?<br/>② I am always ready to help you.</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> ⑯ <b>be sorry to</b> ~<br/>I'm sorry to have kept you waiting.<br/>(= I'm sorry that I have kept you waiting.)</p> <p><input type="checkbox"/> ⑰ <b>I'm afraid (that)</b> …<br/>I'm afraid it's going to rain.</p> | <p>① …を休む / …に出席する<br/>わたしはきょう、学校を休みました。</p> <p>② …を恐れる<br/>失敗をすることを恐れるな。</p> <p>③ …に腹を立てている[立てる]<br/>わたしは彼が遅れたことに腹を立てています。</p> <p>④ …に気がついている<br/>彼は自分の欠点に気がついていません。</p> <p>⑤ …に気をつける<br/>父は健康にとっても気をつけています。</p> <p>⑥ …と異なっている<br/>ぼくの意見は君のとは違います。</p> <p>⑦ …による、…のためだ<br/>その事故は彼の不注意が原因でした。</p> <p>⑧ しきりに~したがる<br/>彼女はしきりに北海道に行きたがっています。</p> <p>⑨ …で有名である<br/>京都は古い寺で有名です。</p> <p>⑩ …が好きだ<br/>わたしの姉[妹]は料理が好きです。</p> <p>⑪ …でいっぱいである<br/>その部屋は子供たちでいっぱいでした。</p> <p>⑫ …が得意だ / …が苦手だ<br/>彼は英語を話すのが得意です。</p> <p>⑬ …に遅れる / …に間に合う<br/>君たちは学校に遅れてはいけません。</p> <p>⑭ …を誇りに思う<br/>彼は父親を誇りに思っています。</p> <p>⑮ ① ~する用意ができている ② 喜んで~する<br/>出発の準備はできましたか。<br/>いつでも喜んであなたをお手伝いします。</p> <p>⑯ ~して残念に[気の毒に、すまなく]思う<br/>お待たせしてすみません。</p> <p>⑰ (好ましくない事態の予測で)…だと思う。<br/>どうやら雨になりそうです。</p> |
|-----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|----------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------------|

## 18

## 前置詞

## 前置詞の用法

前置詞は、名詞、代名詞、あるいは名詞相当語句の前に置かれて《前置詞+名詞(相当語句)》でひとまとまりの句となり、うしろにくる名詞(相当語句)にいろいろな意味を添える語で、前置詞のあとに置かれる名詞(相当語句)を前置詞の目的語という。前置詞によって導かれる句は形容詞の働きをするもの(形容詞句)と、副詞の働きをするもの(副詞句)とがある。

## a 形容詞句

- ① The book **on** the desk is mine. [名詞を修飾]  
 ② This dictionary is **of** great use. [補語]

**注意** 《of+抽象名詞》で形容詞の意味を表す(②)。(of great use = very useful)

## b 副詞句

- ① He went out **without** saying anything. [動詞を修飾]  
 ② She is good **at** cooking. [形容詞を修飾]  
 ③ We live nearer **to** the hospital than the station. [副詞を修飾]

## 前置詞の働きをする句

in, on, at などの単純な形のもものが本来の前置詞であるが、前置詞が他の語と結びついて1つの前置詞のように使われるものがある。

## a at the age of … 「…歳のときに」

He moved to Osaka **at the age of** ten.

## b because of … (原因・理由を表して)「…のために」

I was absent from school **because of** illness.

## c in front of … 「…の前に[で]」

I'll meet him **in front of** the station.

## d instead of … 「…の代わりに、…しないで」

- ① I had tea **instead of** coffee this morning.  
 ② He stayed in bed all day **instead of** going to work.

## e in spite of … 「…にもかかわらず」

She went to school **in spite of** a slight fever.

## f out of … 「…から外へ」

He came **out of** his house.

## g thanks to … 「…のおかげで」

**Thanks to** his help, I was able to finish the work.

## 他の語と結びついた前置詞

### 1 動詞(+名詞)+前置詞

- |                                |                                      |
|--------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| ① agree with … 「…に同意する」        | ② call at + 場所 / call on + 人 「…を訪れる」 |
| ③ belong to … 「…に属する」          | ④ do without … 「…なしですます」             |
| ⑤ get to … 「…に着く」              | ⑥ hear from … 「…から便りがある」             |
| ⑦ hear of … 「…のうわさを聞く」         | ⑧ help … with ~ 「…の~を手伝う」            |
| ⑨ leave … for ~ 「~に向けて…を出発する」  | ⑩ listen to … 「…を聞く」                 |
| ⑪ look after … 「…の世話をする」       | ⑫ look for … 「…を探す」                  |
| ⑬ look forward to … 「…を楽しみに待つ」 | ⑭ pay … for ~ 「~に…を支払う」              |
| ⑮ run over … 「…をひく」            | ⑯ succeed in … 「…に成功する」              |
| ⑰ suffer from … 「…に苦しむ」        | ⑱ take care of … 「…の世話をする, …に注意する」   |
| ⑲ take part in … 「…に参加する」      | ⑳ thank … for ~ 「…に~を感謝する」           |
| ㉑ wait for … 「…を待つ」            | ㉒ write to … 「…に手紙を書く」               |

### 2 be + 形容詞[分詞] + 前置詞

### 3 前置詞+(代)名詞

- |                               |                               |
|-------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| ① after all 「結局」              | ② by mistake 「間違って」           |
| ③ by the way 「ところで」           | ④ for the first time 「初めて」    |
| ⑤ in time for … 「…に間に合って」     | ⑥ of course 「もちろん」            |
| ⑦ of no use 「役に立たない」          | ⑧ on foot 「歩いて」               |
| ⑨ on one's way home 「家に帰る途中で」 | ⑩ on one's way to … 「…へ行く途中で」 |

## その他の前置詞

#### a by + 行為者 「…によって」

I was laughed at **by** them.

#### b by + 乗り物 「(交通手段を表して)…で」

He went to Fukuoka **by** plane.

#### c with + 道具 「…を使って」

She cut the rope **with** a knife.

#### d with + 物 「…を持った」 / with + 物 + 前置詞句[形容詞/副詞] 「(付帯状況を示して)…した状態で」

Mary is a pretty girl **with** blue eyes.

He spoke **with** a pipe **in** his mouth.

#### e for one's age 「年のわりには」

He looks young **for** his age.

## 練 成 問 題

**1** 次の( )に入る最も適当な語(句)をそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

- \*  (1) I will stay here ( ) two months. 〈桐朋〉  
 ア on イ in ウ at エ for [ ]
- \*  (2) There are some pictures ( ) the wall. 〈修道〉  
 ア on イ in ウ at エ to [ ]
- (3) The earth moves ( ) the sun.  
 ア across イ around ウ along エ through [ ]
- \*  (4) ( ) my stay in London, I visited my cousin.  
 ア During イ While ウ For エ On [ ]
- \*  (5) What did you buy ( ) your brother? 〈文教大学付属〉  
 ア to イ by ウ on エ for [ ]
- \*  (6) The boy ran out ( ) the classroom. 〈国立高専〉  
 ア in イ into ウ of エ to [ ]
- (7) I've lost my umbrella. I'm looking ( ) it now.  
 ア at イ up ウ for エ like [ ]
- \*  (8) She was absent ( ) school.  
 ア at イ from ウ in エ of [ ]
- \*  (9) The bus was filled ( ) the students of this school.  
 ア of イ with ウ at エ in [ ]
- (10) He tried to cut the meat ( ) the knife. 〈文教大学付属〉  
 ア with イ by ウ of エ in [ ]

**2** 次の英文の.....に適当な前置詞を書きなさい。

- \*  (1) We have a lot of rain ..... June.
- \*  (2) I was born ..... May 30.
- \*  (3) Our school begins ..... eight thirty-five.
- (4) He has stayed in Hokkaido ..... last week.
- \*  (5) Please wait here. I'll be back ..... a few minutes. 〈青雲〉
- (6) This book is written ..... easy English.
- (7) We have no school ..... Sundays.
- (8) You must wash your hands ..... meals.
- \*  (9) What month comes just ..... August? — September does.
- \*  (10) February comes ..... January and March.
- \*  (11) She got ..... the station at seven.
- \*  (12) Thank you ..... your kind advice.
- \*  (13) She went to the station ..... bus.

3 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) ここから駅までどれくらいありますか。  
How far is it ..... here ..... the station?
- \*  (2) 君は辞書を使わずにこの文の意味がわかりますか。  
Can you understand the meaning of this sentence ..... a  
dictionary?
- \*  (3) わたしの家の前に庭があります。  
I have a garden ..... my house.
- (4) わたしはこの学校のバスケットチームに所属しています。 (洛星)  
I belong ..... the basketball team of this school.
- \*  (5) わたしは長いこと彼から手紙をもらっていません。  
He hasn't ..... me for a long time.
- (6) どうぞ5時までわたしを待ってください。  
Please wait ..... me ..... five.
- \*  (7) どうぞ宿題を手伝ってください。  
Please ..... my homework.
- \*  (8) 彼女は3日前に東京を立ちニューヨークへ向かった。 (土佐)  
She left Tokyo ..... New York three days ago.
- (9) 君の計画は彼の計画と違うのですか。 (土佐)  
Is your plan ..... his?
- \*  (10) わたしは家に帰る途中で、友達の家を訪れました。  
I called ..... my friend's house ..... my way home.

語句

(2) 文 sentence

4 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- \*  (1) a) John studied English, and then went to bed. (東京学芸大学附属)  
b) John studied English ..... going to bed.
- (2) a) I am interested in this program.  
b) This program is interesting ..... me.
- \*  (3) a) He worked all day long.  
b) He worked ..... morning ..... night.
- (4) a) I can't do this if you don't help me.  
b) I can't do this ..... help.
- (5) a) My father is a good cook.  
b) My father is ..... cooking.
- \*  (6) a) Uncle Ben is an old man who has a big nose.  
b) Uncle Ben is an old man ..... a big nose.

# 発展問題

**1** 次の( )に入る最も適当な語(句)をそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

- \*  (1) ( ) my watch it is just seven.  
 ア At イ By ウ With エ On [ ]
- (2) She will start ( ) the morning of 3rd of May. 〈開成〉  
 ア at イ in ウ on エ from [ ]
- \*  (3) The sun rises ( ) the east. 〈同志社〉  
 ア at イ from ウ in エ to [ ]
- (4) Scientists were able to study the moon ( ) telescopes.  
 ア on イ in ウ from エ through [ ]
- \*  (5) Can you see the beautiful bridge ( ) the river?  
 ア for イ in ウ with エ at オ across [ ]
- \*  (6) She is tall ( ) her age. 〈日本大学豊山〉  
 ア with イ to ウ of エ for [ ]
- \*  (7) It is careless ( ) you to make such a mistake.  
 ア of イ for ウ in エ on [ ]
- (8) You don't look well. What is the matter ( ) you? 〈学習院〉  
 ア in イ for ウ with エ by [ ]
- (9) Milk is made ( ) butter and cheese. 〈学習院〉  
 ア from イ into ウ by エ with [ ]
- (10) You should be careful ( ) your health.  
 ア in イ of ウ at [ ]
- \*  (11) His father is known ( ) many people. 〈関西学院〉  
 ア to イ for ウ with エ from [ ]
- \*  (12) You will be ( ) time for the train. 〈日本大学豊山〉  
 ア on イ at ウ in エ over [ ]
- \*  (13) ( ) the way, have you received the letter yet?  
 ア All イ To ウ By エ Post [ ]
- \*  (14) Don't be afraid ( ) dogs too much.  
 ア in イ of ウ to エ from オ for [ ]
- \*  (15) Do you know Ben Johnson? — No, I've never heard ( ) such a person. 〈中央大学附属〉  
 ア from イ of ウ with エ to [ ]
- ▶  (16) He asked a lot of questions ( ) me.  
 ア for イ to ウ of [ ]
- ▶  (17) The train was running ( ) full speed. 〈筑波大学附属〉  
 ア on イ by ウ at エ in [ ]

語句

(4) telescope 望遠鏡

**2** 次の英文の \_\_\_\_\_ に適当な前置詞を書きなさい。

- \*  (1) I met Mike's father \_\_\_\_\_ the first time yesterday.
- \*  (2) We have to hand in the paper \_\_\_\_\_ the end of next month. 〈慶應義塾志木〉
- \*  (3) He was born \_\_\_\_\_ England \_\_\_\_\_ the first \_\_\_\_\_ September, 1936. 〈慶應義塾志木〉
- (4) I was sandwiched \_\_\_\_\_ two fat women. 〈慶應義塾志木〉
- (5) He started on his journey \_\_\_\_\_ a fine morning in May.
- \*  (6) He had no pencil to write \_\_\_\_\_, nor any paper to write \_\_\_\_\_.
- (7) Rome was not built \_\_\_\_\_ a day. 〈土佐塾〉
- (8) If you don't hurry, you'll be late \_\_\_\_\_ the train. 〈修道〉
- \*  (9) Many houses are made \_\_\_\_\_ wood. 〈修道〉
- (10) Listen \_\_\_\_\_ me carefully, or you will fail.
- \*  (11) He succeeded \_\_\_\_\_ inventing a new machine.
- \*  (12) We can go there \_\_\_\_\_ foot. 〈国立高専〉
- (13) He died \_\_\_\_\_ the age of ninety. 〈慶應義塾〉
- \*  (14) He thought it was \_\_\_\_\_ no use. 〈同志社〉
- (15) Her heart was full \_\_\_\_\_ joy.
- (16) Please call \_\_\_\_\_ me \_\_\_\_\_ your way home.
- (17) My hometown is famous \_\_\_\_\_ its beautiful mountains.
- \*  (18) I am looking forward \_\_\_\_\_ your letter. 〈青雲〉

語句

(2) hand in … …を提出する (4) be sandwiched はさまれる fat 太った  
 (11) invent … …を発明する machine 機械 (15) joy 喜び

**3** 次の( )に入る最も適当な語を下のア～ソから1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

〈ラ・サール〉

- (1) One should take care ( ) one's health. [ ]
- (2) Water can be changed ( ) oxygen and hydrogen. [ ]
- \*  (3) A car ran ( ) a cat. [ ]
- (4) Look at my mouth and pronounce ( ) me. [ ]
- \*  (5) He suffered ( ) a bad headache. [ ]
- (6) I am listening ( ) the CD. [ ]
- (7) She is interested ( ) her work. [ ]
- (8) You must thank her ( ) her kindness. [ ]
- (9) I see little difference ( ) the two books. [ ]
- (10) He caught me ( ) the arm. [ ]

ア by            イ at            ウ for            エ to            オ under  
 カ over          キ of            ク above        ケ after        コ in  
 サ between      シ with        ス beneath      セ from        ソ into

語句

(2) oxygen 酸素 hydrogen 水素 (4) pronounce 発音する (5) headache 頭痛

4 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

(1) インクで書きなさい。

〈関西学院〉

Write ..... ink.

\*  (2) 多くの人々はその列車事故で命を失いました。

Many people lost their lives ..... the railway accident.

(3) 明かりをつけてくれませんか。

Turn ..... the light, please.

\*  (4) あなたの援助のおかげでわたしはその仕事を終えることができました。

Thanks ..... your help I finished the work.

\*  (5) 彼女はこの前の10月にスピーチコンテストに出場した。

〈土佐〉

She took part ..... the speech contest last October.

\*  (6) わたしはけさごはんを食べないでパンを食べた。

〈土佐〉

I ate bread instead ..... rice this morning.

(7) 雨が降りそうです。

It ..... rain.

(8) アメリカの家には靴をはいたままで入ってもよい。

〈甲陽学院〉

You may enter an American house .....

.....

5 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

(1) ① While he was staying in Kyoto, he visited some temples.

② ..... his ..... in Kyoto, he visited some temples.

(2) ① As his father helped him, he finished his summer work at last.

② ..... his father's help, he finished his summer work at last.

\*  (3) ① There were a lot of children in the bus.

〈筑波大学附属〉

② The bus was ..... children.

(4) ① That man wearing a hat is my uncle.

〈大阪星光学院〉

② That man ..... a hat ..... is my uncle.

\*  (5) ① How much was his car?

〈土佐塾〉

② How much did he ..... his car?

\*  (6) ① My father flew to Osaka yesterday.

② My father went to Osaka ..... yesterday.

\*  (7) ① It was raining heavily, but she went out shopping.

〈成蹊〉

② In ..... of the heavy rain, she went out shopping.

\*  (8) ① Tom drives carefully, so he has never had an accident.

〈滝〉

② Tom has never had an accident ..... of his careful driving.

\*  (9) ① I began to play soccer when I was ten.

〈城北〉

② I began to play soccer ..... the ..... ten.

## 前置詞を含む連語

- ① **after all**  
He did not appear after all.
- ② **all over ...**  
He is well-known all over the world.
- ③ **at first**  
At first I could not understand him.
- ④ **at last(=in the end)**  
He reached the North Pole at last.
- ⑤ **at (the) least**  
It will cost at least \$30.
- ⑥ **at one's best**  
The flowers here are at their best now.
- ⑦ **at the age of ...**  
He went to London at the age of ten.
- ⑧ **at the end of ...**  
She'll leave Japan at the end of September.
- ⑨ **at the foot of ...**  
My uncle lives at the foot of Mt. Fuji.
- ⑩ **before long**  
He'll arrive here before long.
- ⑪ **be in use**  
This machine is still in use.
- ⑫ **be of use**  
Your advice was of great use.
- ⑬ **by chance**  
I met her by chance at the station.
- ⑭ **except for ...**  
Except for him, we are all from Kyushu.
- ⑮ **in order to+動詞**  
We work in order to live.
- ⑯ **in those days**  
He was well in those days.
- ⑰ **on time**  
He usually comes on time.
- ⑱ **out of order**  
This machine is out of order.
- ① **結局**  
結局、彼は現れませんでした。
- ② **…中(のいたるところ)に**  
彼の名は世界中に知れわたっています。
- ③ **最初は**  
最初は彼の言うことがわかりませんでした。
- ④ **ついに、とうとう**  
彼はついに北極点に到達しました。
- ⑤ **少なくとも**  
それは少なくとも 30 ドルはするでしょう。
- ⑥ **絶頂で**  
ここの花は今が満開です。
- ⑦ **…歳のときに**  
彼は 10 歳のとき、ロンドンに行きました。
- ⑧ **…の終わりに**  
彼女は 9 月の終わりに日本を発つでしょう。
- ⑨ **…の麓(ふもと)に**  
おじは富士山の麓に住んでいます。
- ⑩ **まもなく、近いうちに**  
彼はまもなくここへ着きます。
- ⑪ **用いられている**  
この機械は今でも使用されています。
- ⑫ **役に立っている**  
君の忠告はおおいに役に立ちました。
- ⑬ **偶然、たまたま**  
わたしは偶然、彼女と駅で会いました。
- ⑭ **…を除けば**  
彼を除けば、わたしたちは全員九州出身です。
- ⑮ **～するために**  
わたしたちは生きるために働きます。
- ⑯ **当時は、あのころは**  
当時、彼は元気でした。
- ⑰ **時間どおりに**  
彼はたいてい時間どおりに来ます。
- ⑱ **故障して**  
この機械は故障しています。

## 19

## 現在完了進行形・過去完了

## 現在完了と現在完了進行形

## 1 文の形の違い

- a 現在完了 …… 《主語 + have[has] + 過去分詞～.》
- b 現在完了進行形 …… 《主語 + have[has] been + ～ing.》

## 2 意味上の違い

現在完了の《継続》を表す用法が、おもに過去から現在まで、「ある状態」が継続していることを述べる場合に用いられるのに対し、現在完了進行形は、過去から現在まで、「ある動作、行為・活動」が継続していることを述べる場合に用いられる。

- 比較** ① She **has been busy** since this morning. [現在完了]  
(彼女はけさからずっと忙しいです。)
- ② She **has been reading** a book since this morning. [現在完了進行形]  
(彼女はけさからずっと本を読んでいます。)

**注意** (i) be, know, like, 所有を示す have などの、進行形にしない動詞は現在完了進行形にせず、現在完了で表す。

(○) I **have known** him for five years.  
(わたしは彼を5年間知っています。)

(×) I have been knowing him for five years.

(ii) 次に示すような「動作」を表す動詞では、現在完了は、「過去に始めた動作が現在も継続している状態」を表し、現在完了進行形は、「過去に始めた動作が現在進行中」であることを表す。

- ① I **have played** tennis for three years.  
(わたしは3年間テニスをしています。)
- ② I **have been playing** tennis since this morning.  
(わたしはけさからずっとテニスをしています。)

## 3 現在完了進行形で表された文

- ① She **has been watching** TV since this morning.  
(彼女はけさからずっとテレビを見ています。)
- ② I'm sorry I'm late. **Have you been waiting** long?  
(遅れてすみません。長くお待ちになりましたか。)
- ③ It **has been raining** since last night.  
(昨夜からずっと雨が降っています。)
- ④ How long **has he been playing** the video game?  
(彼はどのくらいテレビゲームをし続けているのですか。)

## 現在完了と過去完了

### 1 文の形の違い

- a** 現在完了 ……《主語 + have[has] + 過去分詞～.》  
**b** 過去完了 ……《主語 + had + 過去分詞～.》

### 2 意味上の違い

現在完了が、現在を基準にした完了、結果、継続、経験を表すのに対し、過去完了は、過去のある時点を基準にして、そのときまでの完了、結果、継続、経験などを表す。

- 比較** ① I **have just finished** the work. [現在完了]  
 (わたしは仕事を(今)ちょうど終えたところです。)  
 ② I **had finished** the work when he visited me. [過去完了]  
 (彼がわたしを訪れたとき、わたしは仕事を終えていました。)

### 3 過去完了の4つの用法

- a** 《完了》 When I got to the station, the train **had already left**.  
 (わたしが駅に着いたとき、列車はすでに発車していました。)  
**b** 《結果》 My father **had gone** to his office when I got up.  
 (わたしが起きたとき、わたしの父はすでに会社に出かけていていませんでした。)  
**c** 《継続》 When I met them in Okinawa, they **had been** there for a week.  
 (わたしが沖縄で彼らに会ったとき、彼らはそこに1週間滞在していました。)  
**d** 《経験》 As I **had seen** him before, I spoke to him at the party.  
 (わたしは以前彼に会ったことがあったので、パーティーで彼に話しかけました。)

### 4 時の前後関係を表す過去完了

主節と従属節からなる文で、主節の動詞が過去形で、従属節の表す内容が主節より時間的にさらに前である場合にも過去完了が使われる。

- 比較** ① I knew (that) he was a baseball player.  
 (わたしは彼が野球選手であることを知っていました。)  
 ② I knew (that) he **had been** a baseball player.  
 (わたしは彼が(かつて)野球選手だったことを知っていました。)

**注意** ①の従属節では、「時制の一致」により、主節の時制に合わせて過去形を用いる。②の従属節では、表される内容が時間的に主節の内容(過去)よりもさらに前のことなので、過去完了を用いる。

#### **注意** agoとbefore

agoは現在を基準にして「…前」、beforeは過去のある時点を基準にして「…前」を表す。

- 比較** ① He died three years **ago**. (彼は3年前に亡くなりました。)  
 ② She said he had died three years **before**. (彼女は彼が3年前に亡くなったと言いました。)

## 練 成 問 題

**1** 《現在完了進行形①》 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- \*  (1) 彼らは2時間前からずっとテニスをしています。  
They ..... tennis for two hours.
- \*  (2) 彼はけさからずっと働いています。  
He ..... since this morning.
- (3) きょうからずっと雪が降っています。  
It ..... since yesterday.
- (4) わたしは30分前からずっと電話で彼女と話しています。  
I ..... with her on the phone for thirty minutes.
- (5) わたしの弟はけさからずっとテレビを見ています。  
My brother ..... TV since this morning.
- \*  (6) あなたはどのくらい彼を待っているのですか。  
How long ..... you ..... for him?
- (7) 雨はどのくらい降り続けているのですか。  
How long ..... it ..... ?

**2** 《過去完了①》 次の英文を日本語に直しなさい。

- \*  (1) When he got home, his children had already gone to bed.  
( ..... )
- \*  (2) I had known him before I got a position in this company.  
( ..... )
- \*  (3) He had eaten nothing for three days until he was found.  
( ..... )
- \*  (4) I went to Paris this summer. I had never been there before.  
( ..... )
- (5) I knew her, for I had met her a year before.  
( ..... )
- (6) When Mike came to see me, I had already finished my homework.  
( ..... )
- \*  (7) She said her father had been in the hospital for three months.  
( ..... )
- (8) When I was born, my parents had been married for ten years.  
( ..... )
- (9) I found the train had left a few minutes before.  
( ..... )

語句

(2) get a position in ... ...に就職する (4) Paris パリ

3 《現在完了進行形②》 次の文を、あとの( )内の語句を文末につけ加えて、現在完了進行形の文に書きかえなさい。

\*  (1) The baby is sleeping. ( for three hours )

.....

\*  (2) We are traveling in Hawaii. ( since yesterday )

.....

(3) She is reading a book. ( for two hours )

.....

(4) He is driving his car. ( since this morning )

.....

(5) They are running in the park. ( for an hour )

.....

(6) I am enjoying my stay in London. ( since last week )

.....

4 《過去完了②》 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

\*  (1) わたしたちが球場に着いたとき、すでに試合は始まっていました。

When we got to the stadium, the game ..... already .....

(2) 彼は退職するまで 30 年間その会社に勤めていました。

He ..... for the company for thirty years before he retired.

(3) わたしはその物語をよく知っていました。というのは父が何度も話してくれたからです。

I knew the story well, for my father ..... it to me many times.

(4) わたしは前日に買ったプレゼントを彼女にあげました。

I gave her the present I ..... the day before.

\*  (5) きのおまで 1 週間ずっと雨が降りませんでした。

It ..... for a week until yesterday.

語句

(2) 退職する retire

5 《時制の一致》 次の文の下線部の動詞を過去形にして全文を書き直しなさい。

\*  (1) I know that she is a kind girl.

.....

\*  (2) I know that he was ill.

.....

(3) I am sure they had a good time.

.....

(4) She says she saw the movie three days ago.

.....



**3** 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- \*  (1) a My father began to work at ten o'clock, and he is still working now.  
b My father ..... working ..... ten o'clock.
- \*  (2) a Two hours have passed since I began to write this letter. (修道)  
b I ..... this letter ..... two hours.
- (3) a I was twelve years old when I first met my grandfather.  
b I ..... never ..... my grandfather before I was twelve years old.
- (4) a I bought a blue sweater two days ago. I was wearing it yesterday.  
b I was wearing a blue sweater yesterday which I ..... the day .....

**4** 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、( )内の語句を並べかえなさい。

- (1) わたしたちはあなたに会うのをずっと楽しみにしています。  
( forward / you / have / meeting / been / to / we / looking ).
- .....
- \*  (2) あなたはけさからずっと何をしていたのですか。  
( have / morning / been / since / you / what / doing / this )?
- .....
- (3) 彼らは東京に引っ越す前、大阪に2年間住んでいました。  
They ( moved / before / Osaka / lived / they / for / Tokyo / in / had / to / two years ).
- .....
- \*  (4) きのう彼は旅行中に撮った写真をわたしに見せてくれました。  
Yesterday he ( had / trip / showed / his / taken / me / during / he / the pictures ).
- .....
- \*  (5) わたしは10歳のときに初めてパンダを見ました。  
I ( was / had / a panda / I / seen / until / never ) ten years old.
- .....

語句

(3) 引っ越す move

**5** 次の日本語を英語に直しなさい。

- (1) 彼女は3時間ずっとピアノの練習をしています。
- .....
- \*  (2) どのくらいの間、雨が激しく降り続けているのですか。
- .....
- (3) わたしが起きたとき、わたしの妹はすでに朝食を済ませていました。
- .....
- \*  (4) わたしは彼が以前、英語の教師であったということを知りませんでした。
- .....

知覚動詞(「見る」,「聞く」,「感じる」などのように感覚を表す動詞)

### 1 主な知覚動詞

see, hear, watch, feel, find 「見かける, 気づく」, notice 「気づく」など。

### 2 知覚動詞の用法 \*知覚動詞は第5文型(SVOC)の文をつくることができる。

**a** 《知覚動詞+目的語+原形不定詞》……「— が～するのを見る[聞く]」など。

- ① I **saw** Tom enter the room. (わたしはトムがその部屋に入るのを見ました。)  
知覚動詞 目的語 原形不定詞
- ② I **heard** the girl sing. (わたしはその少女が歌うのを聞きました。)
- ③ Did you **notice** anyone come in? (君はだれかが入ってくるのに気づきましたか。)
- ④ I **felt** the house shake. (わたしは家が揺れるのを感じました。)

**注意** 原形不定詞……toのつかない不定詞。助動詞の後ろに置いたり, 知覚動詞, 使役動詞とともに用いられる。

**b** 《知覚動詞+目的語+現在分詞》……「— が～しているのを見る[聞く]」など。

- ① I **saw** a bird flying. (わたしは鳥が飛んでいるのを見ました。)
- ② I **heard** a dog barking. (わたしは犬がほえているのを聞きました。)
- ③ I **found** someone standing behind me.  
(わたしは背後にだれかが立っているのに気づきました。)

**注意** 《知覚動詞+目的語+原形不定詞》と《知覚動詞+目的語+現在分詞》の意味上の違い

**比較** **a** I **saw** him swim across the river.

**b** I **saw** him swimming across the river.

**a** は, 泳いで渡るのを一部始終見た, の意味。**b** は, 泳いで渡る途中の動作を見た, の意味。

**c** 《知覚動詞+目的語+過去分詞》……「— が～されるのを見る[聞く]」など。

- ① I **heard** my name called. (わたしはわたしの名前が呼ばれるのを聞きました。)
- ② I **felt** myself pushed from behind. (わたしは後ろから押されるのを感じました。)
- ③ Have you ever **seen** a boxer knocked down?  
(あなたは今までにボクサーがノックダウンされるのを見たことがありますか。)

**注意** 《知覚動詞+目的語+現在分詞》と《知覚動詞+目的語+過去分詞》の区別

**比較** **a** She **noticed** someone calling her name.

(彼女はだれかが自分の名前を呼んでいるのに気づきました。)

**b** She **noticed** her name called.

(彼女は自分の名前が呼ばれているのに気づきました。)

目的語が動作の主体となる場合は現在分詞(**a**), 目的語が動作を受ける場合は過去分詞で表す(**b**)。

## 使役動詞(「～させる」と使役の意味を表す動詞)

## 1 主な使役動詞

make, have, let, get など。

## 2 使役動詞の用法

\* 使役動詞は第5文型(SVOC)の文をつくることができる。

## a 《使役動詞+目的語+原形不定詞》……「一に～させる」

- ① I **made** him go there. (わたしは彼をそこへ行かせました。)
- ② I'll **have** my son show you around the city. (息子に町を案内させましょう。)
- ③ My father **let** me drive his car. (父はわたしが父の車を運転するのを許しました。)

**注意** 使役動詞の make と let の意味上の違い

let は、「(望みどおりに)～させてやる, ～することを許す」の意味あいを持ち, make は, 強制的に「～させる」の意味あいを持つ。

## b 《get +目的語+ to 不定詞》……「(説得などして)一に～させる, してもらう」

- ① I **got** him to stop smoking. (わたしは彼にタバコをやめさせました。)
- ② He **got** his wife to mend his shirt. (彼は奥さんにシャツを繕<sup>つひ</sup>ってもらいました。)

## c 《have[get] +目的語+過去分詞》

- ① 「一を～させる, してもらう」《使役》  
I **had[got]** my hair cut. (髪を切ってもらいました[切らせました。])
- ② 「[自分のもの]を～される」《受け身・被害》  
I **had[got]** my purse stolen. (わたしは財布を盗まれました。)

**注意** ①は had[got] に強勢を置く。②は stolen に強勢を置く。had[got] に強勢を置くと、「財布を盗ませた」の意味になる。

## d 《make +目的語+過去分詞》……「一が～されるようにする」

Can you **make** yourself understood in English?  
(あなたは英語で自分の話を理解してもらえますか。)

## 原形不定詞を用いる文の受動態

原形不定詞を用いる文を受動態にする場合は, 原形不定詞を to 不定詞にかえる。

- ① Jane **saw** him go out of the room.  
→ He **was seen** to go out of the room by Jane.  
(彼はその部屋から出て行くのをジェーンに見られました。)
- ② He **made** us do the work.  
→ We **were made** to do the work by him. (わたしたちは彼にその仕事をやらされました。)



3 次の( )に入る最も適当な語(句)をそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

- (1) I saw her ( ) the window.  
ア open イ opened ウ to open [ ]
- \* (2) Did you see a man ( ) by a car over there?  
ア hit イ hitting ウ to hit [ ]
- (3) Have you ever ( ) Mary playing the piano? (江戸川学園取手)  
ア heard イ asked ウ made エ told [ ]
- (4) The teacher made the students ( ) home early.  
ア go イ going ウ to go [ ]
- \* (5) I'll have my sister ( ) your lunch.  
ア make イ made ウ to make [ ]
- (6) I'll let him ( ) to the movies.  
ア go イ to go ウ going [ ]
- \* (7) I got him ( ) my watch yesterday.  
ア repair イ to repair ウ repaired [ ]
- (8) You had better have your bad tooth ( ) out.  
ア pull イ pulling ウ pulled [ ]
- \* (9) Tom could not make himself ( ) in English. (日本大学)  
ア understand イ understood ウ to understand エ understanding [ ]
- \* (10) I was made ( ) the hard work by him.  
ア do イ to do ウ doing [ ]

4 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) わたしはだれかがわたしの名前を呼ぶのを聞いた。 (お茶の水女子大学附属)  
I heard ..... name.
- \* (2) わたしはジョンといっしょに彼が通りを走っているのを見かけました。 (海城)  
I saw ..... John along the street.
- (3) 机の下で、何か黒いものが動いているのを見えますか。  
Can you see ..... under the desk?
- \* (4) 先生は彼女にその辞書を使うことを許しました。  
The teacher ..... the dictionary.
- (5) ご両親はあなたを外国へ行かせてはくれないでしょう。 (お茶の水女子大学附属)  
Your parents won't ..... you ..... abroad.
- \* (6) ぼくは髪を切ってもらわなければなりません。  
I have to ..... my hair .....
- ▶  (7) あなたはどうしてそう考えるのですか。  
What ..... think so?

## 発展問題

1 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、( )内の語句を並べかえなさい。

- \*  (1) 彼女はだれかが部屋に隠れているのを感じました。  
She ( hiding / felt / in / someone / the / room ).
- (2) わたしはトムが木の下に横になっているのを見かけた。 (巣鴨)  
I ( Tom / the tree / found / lying / under ).
- (3) あなたたちは彼が悪口を言われているのを聞いたことがありますか。  
( ever / heard / you / of / spoken / him / have / ill ) by others?
- \*  (4) 彼女に後ほど電話をかけなおさせましょうか。  
( back / call / shall / you / later / her / have / I )?
- (5) あなたはご主人にたばこをやめてもらうことができますか。  
( your / can / to / you / get / stop / husband / smoking )?
- (6) わたしはそのパーティーで歌を歌わされた。 [1語不足] (日本大学鶴ヶ丘)  
( song / at / I / the / made / party / sing / was / a ).
- \*  (7) 彼女は年よりもずっと若く見えるように努めました。  
( look / really / much / she / herself / tried / make / was / younger / she / to / than ).
- \*  (8) この仕事を終わらせたらすぐにあなたのところに行きます。  
I'll ( as / come / you / get / I / as / this / soon / finished / work / to ).
- (9) あの背の高い男の人がだれなのかわたしに教えてください。  
( who / know / man / is / that / please / tall / me / let ).
- ☛  (10) この薬を飲むと気分が良くなるでしょう。  
( you / this / right / make / all / medicine / will / feel ).
- ☛  (11) 1時間歩いて空腹になってしまった。 (海城)  
( hungry / me / walk / hour's / made / feel / an ).

### 語句

(1) 隠れる hide (3) …の悪口を言う speak ill of … (10) 薬 medicine

2 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、\_\_\_\_\_に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) a) Someone stole my watch yesterday.  
 b) I \_\_\_\_\_ my watch \_\_\_\_\_ yesterday.
- \*  (2) a) She saw me come out of the room.  
 b) I was \_\_\_\_\_ come out of the room by her.
- (3) a) They heard the girls sing the song.  
 b) The girls were \_\_\_\_\_ the song by them.
- \*  (4) a) My father made me write the letter in English.  
 b) I was \_\_\_\_\_ the letter in English by my father.
- (5) a) Bob saw her walking alone along the street.  
 b) She \_\_\_\_\_ alone along the street by Bob.
- (6) a) She was heard singing in the room.  
 b) We \_\_\_\_\_ singing in the room.
- (7) a) Show it to me. 〈芝浦工大附属〉  
 b) Let me \_\_\_\_\_ it.
- ☛  (8) a) Why did you go there? 〈お茶の水女子大学附属〉  
 b) \_\_\_\_\_ made you go there?
- ☛  (9) a) Why did she change her mind? 〈郁文館〉  
 b) What \_\_\_\_\_ her change her mind?
- ☛  (10) a) You ought to report it to him immediately. 〈灘〉  
 b) You should let him \_\_\_\_\_ about it at \_\_\_\_\_.

語句

(9) change one's mind 考えを変える (10) immediately たちちに

3 次の日本語を英語に直しなさい。

- (1) わたしは彼が歯を磨くのを1度も見たことがない。 〈ラ・サール〉  
 -----
- \*  (2) わたしは子供たちが楽しそうに笑っているのを聞きました。  
 -----
- \*  (3) わたしはバスの中で財布を盗まれました。  
 -----
- \*  (4) 彼がいつ来るかわかりませんが、来たらずぐにわたしに知らせてください。  
 -----
- (5) わたしは列車の中で英字新聞を読んでいる紳士を見ました。 〈関西学院〉  
 -----
- (6) わたしは学校へ来る途中で、風に帽子を吹きとばされたのです。 〈大阪星光学院〉  
 -----

語句

(1) 歯を磨く brush one's teeth (2) 楽しそうに happily[merrily]  
 (5) 英字新聞 English (news)paper (6) …を吹きとばす blow … off

## 関係代名詞の制限用法と非制限用法

## 1 制限用法

先行詞は不特定の「人・もの」で、関係代名詞節によって修飾されてはじめて、先行詞がだれを指すのか、何を指すのが特定される用法。

The book which he lent me was very interesting.

(彼がわたしに貸してくれたその本はとてもおもしろかった。)

## 2 非制限用法

特定された人やものを指す先行詞について挿入的、補足的に説明を加える用法。したがって、先行詞には固有名詞、同一種類のものが1つしか存在しないと考えられるものや文脈上特定されるものなどがく。この用法の関係代名詞の前にはふつうコンマが置かれる。

My son, who is an engineer, lives in India now.

(わたしの息子はエンジニアですが、今はインドに住んでいます。)

## 3 制限用法と非制限用法の比較

**比較** ① Mr. Smith has a daughter who became a doctor. [制限用法]

(スミス氏には医者になった娘がいます。)

② Mr. Brown has an only daughter, who became a doctor. [非制限用法]

(ブラウン氏には一人娘がいますが、その娘は医者になりました。)

**注意** (i) ①は「スミス氏の医者になった娘」(→スミス氏にはほかにも娘がいるかもしれない)を話題にしているが、②では「ブラウン氏の一人娘」について話題にしている。

(ii) 関係代名詞の非制限用法は、《接続詞+代名詞》に置きかえて訳しやす多い。

②は Mr. Brown has an only daughter, **and she** became a doctor. と同意文になる。

(iii) 関係代名詞 that に非制限用法はない。

(×) Mr. Brown has an only daughter, that became a doctor.

## 関係代名詞 what

関係代名詞の what は、それ自体に先行詞を含み the thing(s) which もしくは that which 「～のもの、～のこと」の意味を表す。この what は名詞の働きをする節(名詞節)を導き、主語、補語、動詞の目的語、前置詞の目的語として用いられる。また、what 節は単数・複数のいずれの内容も表す。

## a 主語として用いられる what 節

What I said is true. (わたしが言ったことは本当です。)

(= That which I said is true.)

**b** 補語として用いられる **what** 節

That is **what I wanted to know**. (それがわたしが知りたかったことです。)

(= That is the thing which I wanted to know.)

**c** 動詞の目的語として用いられる **what** 節

I don't believe **what he says**. (わたしは彼の言うことを信じません。)

(= I don't believe the things which he says.)

**d** 前置詞の目的語として用いられる **what** 節

There was no truth in **what he said**. (彼の言うことにはまったく真実が含まれていませんでした。)

(= There was no truth in that which he said.)

## 関係副詞

関係代名詞が、接続詞と代名詞の働きを兼ねるのに対し、関係副詞は接続詞と副詞の働きを兼ね、関係代名詞と同様に、先行詞を修飾する形容詞節を導く。関係副詞は、《前置詞＋関係代名詞》に置きかえることができる。

**a** **where** (in which, at which, to which など)

This is the place **where** I was born. (ここがわたしが生まれた場所です。)

(= This is the place in[at] which I was born.)

**注意** 先行詞が the place の場合、先行詞は省略できる。また、先行詞の the place を省略せずに、関係副詞の where を省略することもある。

① This is **where** I was born.

② This is the place I was born.

**b** **when** (at which, on which, in which など)

I don't know the time **when** he will come back. (わたしは彼が戻ってくる時間を知りません。)

(= I don't know the time at which he will come back.)

**注意** 先行詞が the time の場合、先行詞は省略できる。また、関係副詞の when を省略することもできる。

**c** **why** (for which)

Tell me (the reason) **why** you were late. (あなたが遅れた理由をわたしに言いなさい。)

(= Tell me the reason for which you were late.)

**注意** 先行詞にあたる the reason はふつう省略される。または、関係副詞の why を省略してもよい。

**d** **how** (in which)

This is **how** he made the machine. (このようにして彼はその機械を作りました。)

(= This is the way in which he made the machine.)

**注意** how は、先行詞にあたる the way を伴わず、単独で用いる。また、先行詞にあたる the way だけを how の代わりに用いることもある。the way how とはしない。

## 練 成 問 題

**1** 《関係代名詞の制限用法と非制限用法》 次の各組の英文を日本語に直しなさい。

- \*  (1)① He is the boy who introduced an American girl to me.  
( )
- ② I met Mike, who introduced an American girl to me.  
( )
- \*  (2)① The book which he spoke of the other day was very interesting.  
( )
- ② The book, which he spoke of the other day, was very interesting.  
( )
- (3)① He has two daughters who are married.  
( )
- ② He has two daughters, who are married.  
( )
- (4)① There were a lot of passengers who were standing.  
( )
- ② There were a lot of passengers, who were standing.  
( )
- (5)① The tree which was planted fifty years ago is ten meters tall.  
( )
- ② The tree, which is as old as my father, is ten meters tall.  
( )

語句

(3) be married 結婚している (4) passenger 乗客

**2** 《関係代名詞 **what** の用法》 次の日本文に合う英文になるように、( )内の語句を並べかえなさい。

- \*  (1) 彼の言ったことは本当のではありません。  
( he / cannot / true / what / said / be ).  
-----
- \*  (2) これはわたしがきょうしなければならないことです。  
( is / do / what / must / today / this / I ).  
-----
- (3) われわれは美しいものを愛します。  
( is / love / beautiful / what / we ).  
-----
- (4) 彼はわたしが言ったことに興味を示しました。  
( an interest / what / told / he / him / I / in / showed ).  
-----

3 《関係副詞①》 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- \*  (1) 春は多くの植物が地上に芽を出す季節です。  
Spring is the season ..... many plants grow on the earth.
- \*  (2) 海の見えるところで昼食をとりましょう。  
Let's have lunch ..... we can see the sea.
- (3) そんなわけでわたしは彼女に会うことができませんでした。  
That is ..... I could not see her.
- (4) このようにしてわたしはその問題を解きました。  
This is ..... I solved the problem.

4 《関係副詞②》 次の英文の.....に、**where, when, how, why**の中から適当なものを選んで書きなさい。また、完成した英文を日本語に直しなさい。

- (1) Do you know the date ..... she left for New York?  
( ..... )
- \*  (2) I don't know ..... he has been absent from school for such a long time.  
( ..... )
- \*  (3) This is ..... I learned to use these computers.  
( ..... )
- (4) This is the shop ..... we usually buy what we need in our daily life.  
( ..... )

語句

(4) daily life 日常生活

5 次の( )に入る最も適当な語をそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

- \*  (1) I'll never forget ( ) you told me.  
ア that イ which ウ what [ ]
- (2) I want to visit the town ( ) Shakespeare was born.  
ア which イ where ウ what [ ]
- \*  (3) This is the village ( ) I visited last year.  
ア which イ where ウ what [ ]
- (4) I'm looking forward to the time ( ) I can see you.  
ア where イ when ウ what [ ]
- \*  (5) Do you know ( ) this machine works?  
ア which イ what ウ how [ ]
- (6) ( ) you have to do is to prepare for the test.  
ア which イ what ウ where [ ]
- \*  (7) This is ( ) he made such a mistake.  
ア where イ why ウ what [ ]

語句

(2) Shakespeare シェイクスピア (5) work 動く、動作する

## 発展問題

1 次の( )に入る最も適当な語(句)をそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

- \*  (1) The bridge, ( ) was built last year, is the longest in our country.  
ア which イ where ウ that [ ]
- \*  (2) I met his sister, ( ) told me an interesting story.  
ア who イ that ウ which [ ]
- (3) This is the village ( ) he was born. (同志社)  
ア which イ to which ウ in which [ ]
- \*  (4) I don't know the exact time ( ) he will return.  
ア at which イ to which ウ which [ ]
- (5) This is ( ) he failed in the examination.  
ア what イ where ウ why [ ]
- \*  (6) ( ) we live in is called a house. (灘)  
ア That イ What ウ Where [ ]
- (7) I want to know ( ) I operate an airplane.  
ア which イ why ウ how [ ]

語句

(4) exact 正確な (7) operate ... ...を操作[操縦]する

2 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- \*  (1) a He still can't find the reason he made Cathy cry.  
b He still can't find ..... he made Cathy cry.
- \*  (2) a I told my mother the way in which she could send e-mail.  
b I told my mother ..... she could send e-mail.
- \*  (3) a Here is a very old house. He was born in the house.  
b Here is a very old house ..... he was born.
- \*  (4) a There is some truth in his words.  
b There is some truth in ..... he says.
- (5) a We will never forget the day ..... which we won the game.  
b We will never forget the day ..... we won the game.
- (6) a This is the house where he lives. (青山学院)  
b This is the house ..... he lives.
- (7) a Hamlet is a famous play. It was written by Shakespeare.  
b Hamlet, ..... was written by Shakespeare, is a famous play.
- (8) a Every child loves this game as it is so exciting.  
b Every child loves this game, ..... is so exciting.

語句

(7) Hamlet 『ハムレット』 play 戯曲

3 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) 駅前でひとりの少年に会った。その子がホテルへ行く道を教えてくれた。 (明治大学付属明治)  
I met a boy in front of the station, ..... showed me the way to the hotel.
- \*  (2) こうやって彼らはその試験に合格しました。  
This is ..... they passed the examination.
- \*  (3) この国に必要なのは偉大な指導者たちです。 (慶應義塾志木)  
..... this country needs is great leaders.
- (4) 彼が言おうとしていることに耳を傾けなさい。 (関西学院)  
Listen to ..... he is going to say.
- \*  (5) このことがあなたが遅れた理由ですか。 (開成)  
Is this ..... you were late?
- (6) 彼女が先日訪れた町にはほとんど若者がいませんでした。  
There were few young people in the town ..... she visited the other day.
- \*  (7) われわれが魚つりに行った日は、風がたいへん強かった。  
The day ..... fishing was very windy.
- (8) ぼくの生まれた村は、この町からずっとはなれた所にある。 (慶應義塾)  
The village ..... I ..... is far away from this town.
- \*  (9) わたしが夜遅く1人でそこに行った理由をあなたに教えることはできません。  
I can't tell you the reason ..... I went there alone late at night.
- (10) その情報は昨日、伊藤氏が教えてくれたのですが、わたしにとってかなり重要であることがわかりました。  
The information, ..... was told by Mr. Ito yesterday, proved to be quite important to me.

語句

(3) 指導者 leader (7) 風が強い windy (10) ...であるとわかる prove to be ...

4 次の日本語を英語に直しなさい。

- \*  (1) 京都はたくさんの古い寺院がある美しい都市です。〔whereを用いて〕  
.....
- \*  (2) 彼は自分の生まれた田舎をよく訪ねます。 (青山学院)  
.....
- \*  (3) だれも彼の言うことなど信じないだろう。〔whatを用いて〕 (灘)  
.....
- (4) そういう理由で彼はわたしの申し出を断りました。〔whyを用いて〕  
.....
- (5) 彼はわたしがどうやって出世したのかを知りたがりました。〔howを用いて〕  
.....
- (6) その山の頂上に到達した日を決してわたしは忘れないでしょう。 (ラ・サール)  
.....

語句

(2) 田舎 country (4) 申し出 offer ...を断る refuse ... (5) 出世する succeed in life

## 分詞構文の働き

《時》, 《理由》, 《条件》, 《譲歩》, 《付帯状況》などを表す副詞節と同じ内容を, 分詞を使って簡潔に表した文のことを分詞構文という。分詞構文は文語的表現なので, 日常的な口語では, あまり使用されない。

- 【比較】 ① When he saw me, he ran away. (わたしを見ると, 彼は走って逃げました。)
- 副詞節
- ② Seeing me, he ran away.
- 分詞構文

## 分詞構文の意味

## a 《時》を表す分詞構文

**Coming** home from school, I was hungry.

(= When I came home from school, I was hungry.)

(学校から帰ってきたとき, わたしはおなかがすいていました。)

## b 《理由》を表す分詞構文

**Being** ill, he could not go to the movies with us.

(= As he was ill, he could not go to the movies with us.)

(病気だったので, 彼はわたしたちとっしょに映画に行くことができませんでした。)

## c 《条件》を表す分詞構文

**Turning** to the left, you will find the bank on your right.

(= If you turn to the left, you will find the bank on your right.)

(左へ曲がれば, 右手にその銀行が見つかるでしょう。)

## d 《譲歩》を表す分詞構文

**Being** tired, he went on working.

(= Though he was tired, he went on working.)

(疲れていたけれども, 彼は働き続けました。)

## e 《付帯状況》を表す分詞構文

① **Smiling** at us, she began her speech.

(= She smiled at us, and she began her speech.)

(彼女はわたしたちにはほえんで, スピーチを始めました。)

② He drove his car, **listening** to the radio.

(彼はラジオを聞きながら車を運転しました。)

【注意】 分詞構文が《時》, 《理由》, 《条件》, 《譲歩》, 《付帯状況》などのうち, どの意味を表すかは, 文の前後関係から判断する。

## 分詞構文の作り方①

分詞構文で表される内容は、《接続詞＋主語＋動詞～》の副詞節と同じである。分詞構文は、副詞節の接続詞と主語を取り去り、動詞を現在分詞にすればよい。

- ① While I stayed in Kyoto, I visited some old temples.

↓  
**Staying** in Kyoto, I visited some old temples.

(京都に滞在している間に、わたしはいくつかの古い寺を訪ねました。)

- ② If you work hard, you will succeed.

↓  
**Working** hard, you will succeed. (一生懸命働けば、あなたは成功するでしょう。)

**注意** 分詞構文の否定形は、否定語を分詞の前に置く。

As she did not know his address, she could not visit him.

→ **Not knowing** his address, she could not visit him.

(彼の住所を知らなかったので、彼女は彼を訪ねることができませんでした。)

## 分詞構文の作り方②

- a** 分詞構文で表す部分の主語と主節の主語が異なるときは、分詞の前に主語を残す。

As it was very hot, I could not sleep.

→ **It being** very hot, I could not sleep.

(とても暑かったので、わたしは眠ることができませんでした。)

- b** 分詞構文で受け身の動作・状態を表すときは、《**being**＋過去分詞》とする。

As the book is written in easy English, it can be understood even by children.

→ **(Being) written** in easy English, the book can be understood even by children.

(簡単な英語で書かれているので、その本は子供でも理解することができます。)

**注意** (i) 受け身の分詞構文で being が文頭にくるときには、ふつう省略する。

(ii) 副詞節から取り去る主語が名詞(ここでは the book)の場合は、主節の代名詞(it)をそれが指す名詞に戻す。

- c** 分詞構文で表す部分の時制が、主節より前のときは、《**having**＋過去分詞》とする。

As I finished the work, I have nothing to do.

→ **Having finished** the work, I have nothing to do.

(仕事を終えてしまったので、わたしは何もすることがありません。)

## 練 成 問 題

**1** 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- \*  (1)a While I walked along the street, I met a friend of mine.  
       **b** ..... along the street, I met a friend of mine.
- \*  (2)a As he felt tired, he went to bed earlier.  
       **b** ..... tired, he went to bed earlier.
- (3)a If you turn to the left, you will find the library.  
       **b** ..... to the left, you will find the library.
- \*  (4)a Though he was young, he was able to understand what I said.  
       **b** ..... young, he was able to understand what I said.
- (5)a She smiled at me, and she began to speak.  
       **b** ..... at me, she began to speak.
- \*  (6)a As I did not have anything to do, I went to the movies.  
       **b** ..... anything to do, I went to the movies.
- \*  (7)a As it was a fine day, we went out for a walk.  
       **b** ..... a fine day, we went out for a walk.
- (8)a As he did his homework, he can watch TV now.  
       **b** ..... his homework, he can watch TV now.
- (9)a As the book is written in easy English, it is read by students.  
       **b** ..... in easy English, the book is read by students.

**2** 次の英文を日本語に直しなさい。

- \*  (1) Crossing the bridge, you'll see a white building on the left.  
       ( ..... )
- \*  (2) Being diligent, you will succeed in life.  
       ( ..... )
- \*  (3) Staying with my aunt, I worked on the farm.  
       ( ..... )
- \*  (4) Not knowing his address, she could not write to him.  
       ( ..... )
- (5) It being cold yesterday, I did not go swimming.  
       ( ..... )
- (6) Seen from the top of the building, people in the streets looked so small.  
       ( ..... )
- (7) Having worked so hard, I am very hungry and thirsty now.  
       ( ..... )

語句

(2) diligent 勤勉な    succeed in life 出世する    (7) thirsty のどが渴いた

3 次の \_\_\_\_\_ に、あとの( )内の語を適当な形に直して書きなさい。

- (1) \_\_\_\_\_ kind, he is loved by everyone. ( be )
- (2) \_\_\_\_\_ ill, he was absent from school. ( be )
- \*  (3) \_\_\_\_\_ at the station, she called her mother. ( arrive )
- \*  (4) He went out of the room, \_\_\_\_\_ goodbye. ( say )
- (5) \_\_\_\_\_ down on the grass, we took lunch. ( sit )
- (6) The dog barked, \_\_\_\_\_ after me. ( run )
- \*  (7) \_\_\_\_\_ to the right, you'll find the station. ( turn ) 〈中央大学附属〉
- (8) Not \_\_\_\_\_ enough money, I couldn't buy the CD. ( have )
- \*  (9) It \_\_\_\_\_ Sunday, the department store was very crowded. ( be )
- \*  (10) \_\_\_\_\_ by the police officer, he ran away. ( see ) 〈灘〉

語句

(6) bark ほえる (9) crowded 混雑して

4 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、\_\_\_\_\_に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) そのニュースを聞いたとき、彼女はうれしそうでした。  
\_\_\_\_\_ the news, she looked happy.
- \*  (2) 彼女は忙しかったので、外出しませんでした。  
\_\_\_\_\_, she didn't go out.
- (3) 彼はテレビを見ながら朝食をとりました。  
He ate breakfast, \_\_\_\_\_.
- \*  (4) 彼女の電話番号を知らなかったので、彼は彼女に電話できませんでした。  
\_\_\_\_\_ her phone number, he couldn't call her.
- \*  (5) 親切な女の子に助けられて、そのお年寄りの男性は通りを渡ることができました。  
\_\_\_\_\_ a kind girl, the old man was able to cross the street.

5 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、( )内の語句を並べかえなさい。

- \*  (1) その箱を開けると、古い写真が入っていました。〔1語不要〕  
( box / opening / I / the ), I found an old picture in it.  
-----
- (2) とても暖かかったので、彼はコートを脱ぎました。  
( warm / being / it / very ), he took off his coat.  
-----
- (3) やさしい英語で書かれているので、彼の新しい小説は読みやすい。〔1語不足〕 〈久留米大学附設〉  
( English / written / easy ), his new novel is easy to read.  
-----
- \*  (4) 宿題をしてから、わたしは買い物に行きました。〔1語不要〕  
( did / my / having / homework / done ), I went shopping.  
-----

# 発展問題

1 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

(1)(a) As he was poor, he could not pay the doctor. (早稲田大学高等学院)

(b) ....., he could not pay the doctor.

\*  (2)(a) If you turn left, you will see the building.

(b) ....., you will see the building.

\*  (3)(a) As it was rainy, we could not play tennis.

(b) ....., we could not play tennis.

(4)(a) As it rained a lot last night, the lake has a lot of water.

(b) ..... rained a lot last night, the lake has a lot of water.

(5)(a) As I had met her before, I talked to her at the party.

(b) ..... her before, I talked to her at the party.

\*  (6)(a) Being poor, he was honest. (灘)

(b) ..... poor, he was honest.

\*  (7)(a) Not knowing how to solve the problem, he asked me for some help.

(b) As ..... how to solve the problem, he asked me for some help.

(8)(a) It being so cold, I stayed home all day.

(b) ..... so cold, I stayed home all day.

\*  (9)(a) Having had a rich harvest last year, we live happily.

(b) ..... a rich harvest last year, we live happily.

語句

(9) rich harvest 豊作

2 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

\*  (1) 彼は早起きして、散歩に行きました。

....., he went for a walk.

(2) わたしの姉は料理が上手なので、ときどき夕食を作ります。

..... cook, my sister sometimes cooks dinner.

\*  (3) その質問は簡単だったので、彼はすぐに答えました。

....., he answered it quickly.

(4) 彼らは金持ちではないけれども、すばらしい家族です。

....., they are a wonderful family.

\*  (5) 見知らぬ人に話しかけられて、彼女は走って逃げました。

..... a stranger, she ran away.

(6) その本を読み終えてしまったので、わたしは新しい本を買うつもりです。

..... the book, I'm going to buy a new one.

語句

(5) 見知らぬ人 stranger

**3** 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、( )内の語句を並べかえなさい。

\*  (1) すぐに出発すれば、その列車に間に合いますよ。〔1語不要〕  
( once / for / be / starting / you / if / at / time / will / in ) the train.

\*  (2) きょうはする仕事が多くないので、あなたをドライブに連れていってあげます。  
( you / do / I'll / having / to / much / not / take / work ) for a drive today.

(3) 暑い日だったので、わたしたちは海へ泳ぎに行きました。  
( a / swimming / it / day / went / being / we / hot ) in the sea.

\*  (4) 彼は家を10時に出発して、空港に正午に着きました。〔1語不要〕  
( at / home / arrived / at ten / at noon / he / the airport / arriving / left ).

(5) ここから見ると、あの船は小さな点のように見えます。〔1語不要〕  
( like / seen / small / here / looks / from / seeing / a / that ship ) dot.

(6) わたしは以前、神戸に住んでいたもので、今でもそこに友達が何人かいます。〔1語不足〕  
( in / some / I / friends / still / lived / have / before / Kobe ) there.

語句

(5) 点 dot (6) 今でも still

**4** 次の文を分詞構文を用いて書きかえなさい。

\*  (1) When he looked at the big dog, he ran away at once.

(2) Though he is poor, he is happy.

(3) She sat at the desk, and she began to read the letter.

\*  (4) As I did not know what to do, I did nothing. 〈甲陽学院〉

\*  (5) As he stayed up late last night, he is very sleepy today.

㊦  (6) As there was little time left, we had to be in a hurry.

㊦  (7) As she was brought up in America, she speaks English like a native.

語句

(5) stay up (寝ないで)起きている (7) native ネイティブスピーカー

直接話法と間接話法

人が言ったことを、その人が言った言葉どおりに伝える方法を直接話法、伝達者の言葉に直して伝える方法を間接話法という。

- 【比較】 ① He said, "I am busy." (彼は「わたしは忙しい。」と言いました。) [直接話法]  
 ② He said that he was busy. (彼は忙しいと言いました。) [間接話法]

話法の転換

直接話法を間接話法にかえたり、間接話法を直接話法にかえたりすることを話法の転換という。話法を転換する場合は、いくつかの規則に従わなければならない。

- ① Mr. White said to me, "My son is in Japan now."  
 ↓ ↓ ↓ ↓  
 ② Mr. White told me that his son was in Japan then.  
 ① ② ③ ④  
 (ホワイト氏は息子が日本にいますと、わたしに言いました。)

1 伝達動詞と接続詞などの変化

- a 被伝達文が平叙文のとき …… say[said] to … → tell[told] … that  
 He said to me, "I have a dog." (彼は「わたしは犬を飼っています。」とわたしに言いました。)  
 → He **told** me (**that**) he had a dog. (彼は犬を飼っているとわたしに言いました。)

- 【注意】 (i) 接続詞 that は省略することができる。  
 (ii) to … が示されていない場合は, say[said] that とする。  
 He said, "I have a dog." (彼は「わたしは犬を飼っています。」と言いました。)  
 → He **said** (**that**) he had a dog. (彼は犬を飼っていると言いました。)

- b 被伝達文が疑問文のとき  
 ① 疑問詞を使わない疑問文のとき …… 《ask[asked] + 目的語 + if[whether] …》  
 He said to me, "Are you busy?" (彼は「あなたは忙しいですか。」とわたしに言いました。)  
 → He **asked** me **if[whether]** I was busy. (彼はわたしが忙しいかどうかたずねました。)

- ② 疑問詞を使う疑問文のとき …… 《ask[asked] + 目的語 + 疑問詞…》  
 He said to me, "Where do you live?" (彼は「あなたはどこに住んでいるのですか。」とわたしに言いました。)  
 → He **asked** me **where** I lived. (彼はわたしにどこに住んでいるのかたずねました。)

【注意】 疑問文の被伝達文は、間接話法では間接疑問文の形をとる。

- c 被伝達文が命令文のとき …… 《tell[ask] + 目的語 + to + 動詞の原形…》  
 ① My father said to me, "Answer the question." (父はわたしに「質問に答えなさい。」と言いました。)  
 → My father **told** me **to answer** the question. (父はわたしに質問に答えるように言いました。)  
 ② He said to her, "Please open the door." (彼は彼女に「ドアを開けてください。」と言いました。)  
 → He **asked** her **to open** the door. (彼は彼女にドアを開けてくれるように頼みました。)

③ She said to me, "Don't use my pen." (彼女はわたしに「わたしのペンを使わないで。」と言いました。)

→ She **told** me not **to use** her pen. (彼女はわたしに彼女のペンを使わないように言いました。)

**注意** (i) tell と ask の使い分け …… 被伝達文が, please のついた依頼の文の場合に ask を用いる(②)。

(ii) 被伝達文が否定命令文の場合は, 不定詞の否定形 not to ~ を用いる(③)。

## 2 代名詞の変化

① She says, "I am hungry." (彼女は「わたしは空腹です。」と言っています。)

→ She says (that) **she** is hungry. (彼女は空腹だと言っています。)

② Tom said to me, "This belongs to me." (トムはわたしに「これはぼくのもです。」と言いました。)

→ Tom told me (that) **that** belonged to **him**. (トムはわたしにそれは自分のものだと言いました。)

**注意** 指示代名詞の this[these] は that[those] にかわる(②)。

## 3 時制の一致

① She says, "I am hungry." (彼女は「わたしは空腹です。」と言っています。)

→ She **says** (that) **she is** hungry. (彼女は空腹だと言っています。)

② She said, "I am busy." (彼女は「わたしは忙しい。」と言いました。)

→ She **said** (that) **she was** busy. (彼女は忙しいと言いました。)

③ She said, "I was lonely." (彼女は「わたしは寂しかった。」と言いました。)

→ She **said** (that) **she had been** lonely. (彼女は寂しかったと言いました。)

④ She said, "I will get home soon." (彼女は「わたしはまもなく家に着きます。」と言いました。)

→ She **said** (that) **she would** get home soon. (彼女はまもなく家に着くと言いました。)

**注意** 助動詞を用いた被伝達文が時制の一致を受ける場合は, 助動詞の過去形を用いる(④)。

## 4 副詞の交代

He said, "I am busy now." (彼は「わたしは今, 忙しい。」と言いました。)

→ He said (that) he was busy **then**. (彼はそのとき忙しいと言いました。)

now 「今」 → then 「そのとき」

today 「きょう」 → that day 「その日」

yesterday 「きのう」 → the day before, the previous day 「前日」

last night 「昨夜」 → the night before, the previous night 「前夜」

tomorrow 「あした」 → the next day, the following day 「翌日」

… ago 「(今から) …前に」 → … before 「(そのときから) …前に」

here 「ここに」 → there 「そこに」

## 練 成 問 題

**1** 次の文を間接話法に書きかえるとき、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- \*  (1)① He said to me, "You are a kind boy."  
 ② He ..... I was a kind boy.
- \*  (2)① I said to him, "Is your brother a good tennis player?"  
 ② I ..... his brother was a good tennis player.
- (3)① She said to me, "Where are you going?"  
 ② She ..... I was going.
- \*  (4)① I said to him, "Tell me the reason."  
 ② I ..... tell me the reason.
- \*  (5)① The man said to us, "Please give me some drink."  
 ② The man ..... give him some drink.

**2** 次の文を間接話法に書きかえるとき、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1)① She said, "I live here."  
 ② She said that ..... there.
- \*  (2)① She said, "My mother is not well today."  
 ② She said that ..... mother ..... not well that day.
- (3)① He said, "I lived here."  
 ② He said that ..... lived there.
- \*  (4)① He said to us, "I finished it yesterday."  
 ② He told us that ..... it the day before.
- \*  (5)① Ms. White said to me, "I will leave tomorrow."  
 ② Ms. White told me that ..... the next day.

**3** 次の文を間接話法に書きかえるとき、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1)① She said to me, "You work too hard."  
 ② She ..... me ..... too hard.
- (2)① I said to her, "Can you swim?"  
 ② I ..... her ..... swim.
- \*  (3)① I said to him, "What sports do you like?"  
 ② I ..... him what sports .....
- \*  (4)① He said to me, "Cook me something."  
 ② He ..... me ..... something.
- (5)① She said to me, "Please sing a song for me."  
 ② She ..... me ..... a song for her.

4 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、( )に入る最も適当な語(句)をそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

- \*  (1) ① He said to her, "This pen is yours."  
 ② He told her that ( ① ) pen was ( ② ). [ ]  
 ア ① this ② yours イ ① that ② yours  
 ウ ① that ② his エ ① that ② hers
- (2) ① She said to me, "Did you hear the news?"  
 ② She asked me if ( ) the news. [ ]  
 ア I heard イ she heard ウ I had heard エ she had heard
- \*  (3) ① The teacher said, "World War II ended in 1945."  
 ② The teacher said that World War II ( ) in 1945. [ ]  
 ア ends イ ended ウ has ended エ had ended
- (4) ① He said to me, "How tall are you?"  
 ② He asked me ( ). [ ]  
 ア how tall was I イ how tall I was ウ how I was tall エ I was how tall
- \*  (5) ① She said to the boys, "Don't play soccer here."  
 ② She told the boys ( ) soccer there. [ ]  
 ア don't play イ not play ウ not to play エ not playing

語句

(3) World War II 第二次世界大戦

5 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) 父はよく「わたしは新しいカメラがほしい。」と言います。  
 My father often ..... that ..... a new camera.
- \*  (2) 「わたしはあなたとお話がしたい。」と彼はわたしに言った。 (関西大学第一)  
 He told me ..... wanted to talk .....
- (3) 彼は彼女に、最善を尽くさなければいけないと言いました。 [2通りの文で] (学習院)  
 ① He ..... her, "You must do your best."  
 ② He told her that ..... must do ..... best.
- \*  (4) わたしはベティにパリへ行っただことがあるかどうかたずねた。 (同志社)  
 I ..... Betty ..... she ..... visited Paris.
- \*  (5) 母はわたしに「あなたは何時に戻りますか。」と言いました。 [2通りの文で]  
 ① My mother said to me, "What time ..... come back?"  
 ② My mother ..... me what time ..... come back.
- \*  (6) 彼はわたしに「わたしに新聞を持ってきてください。」と言いました。 [2通りの文で]  
 ① He said to me, "..... bring ..... the newspaper."  
 ② He asked me ..... bring ..... the newspaper.
- (7) 医者わたしに父にあまり働きすぎないように言いました。  
 The doctor ..... my father ..... work too much.

## 発展問題

1 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) (a) He said, "I am tired." 〈法政大学第一〉  
 (b) He said that ..... tired.
- \*  (2) (a) She said to me, "My sister looks sad."  
 (b) She ..... me that ..... sister ..... sad.
- \*  (3) (a) He said to me, "I visited Kobe two years ago."  
 (b) He ..... me that ..... visited Kobe two years  
 .....
- (4) (a) He said to me, "Can you skate?" 〈法政大学第一〉  
 (b) He asked me ..... skate.
- \*  (5) (a) She said to me, "Do you know my brother?" 〈関西学院〉  
 (b) She ..... me ..... brother.
- \*  (6) (a) She said to me, "Where did you see him yesterday?"  
 (b) She ..... me ..... him the  
 day .....
- (7) (a) He said to me, "How long have you lived here?"  
 (b) He ..... me .....
- \*  (8) (a) She asked me if I knew him. 〈同志社〉  
 (b) She said to me, "..... him?"
- \*  (9) (a) He said he would take his son to the zoo the next day.  
 (b) He said, "..... take ..... son to the zoo ....."
- \*  (10) (a) She is always saying to me, "Study hard." 〈筑波大学附属〉  
 (b) She is always ..... me ..... study hard.
- (11) (a) He said to me, "Don't open the window." 〈修道〉  
 (b) He ..... me ..... open the window.
- \*  (12) (a) He told the boys not to do such a thing.  
 (b) He ..... to the boys, "..... do such a thing."
- \*  (13) (a) He said to me, "..... you free now?"  
 (b) He asked me ..... I was free .....
- (14) (a) He said to me, "Where should I get off the train?" 〈愛光〉  
 (b) He ..... me where ..... get off the train.
- (15) (a) She said to me, "Will you lend me your pencil?" 〈法政大学第二〉  
 (b) She asked me ..... lend ..... my pencil.

**2** 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、( )内の語句を並べかえなさい。

- \*  (1) ボブは本を返しにメアリーを訪ねると言っていました。〔1語不足〕 〈豊島岡女子学園〉  
( Mary / said / visit / Bob / he ) to return a book.
- .....
- \*  (2) 健はわたしにピアノを弾いてくださいと言いました。〔1語不要〕 〈東明館〉  
( the / me / piano / asked / play / Ken / to / said ).
- .....
- (3) 彼はわたしに「どちらの写真が気に入ったか。」と言った。 〈青雲〉  
( asked / he / I / liked / me / picture / which ).
- .....
- (4) 図書館で騒いではいけないと、何度言ったらわかるのですか。 〈滝〉  
( times / to / do / have / tell / many / I / not / how / you ) to make a noise in the library?
- .....
- \*  (5) わたしは彼にその仕事をすぐにしなればいけないのか聞きました。〔1語不足〕  
I ( do / I / him / once / to / asked / at / the work / if ).
- .....
- (6) 彼女は「1時間前に地震がありました。」と言いました。〔1語不要〕  
She ( had / before / an earthquake / that / ago / been / an hour / said / there ).

語句

(6) 地震 earthquake

**3** 次の文を直接話法は間接話法に、間接話法は直接話法に書きかえなさい。

- \*  (1) I said to Mary, "These flowers are for you."
- .....
- \*  (2) She said to me, "How can I get to the station?"
- .....
- (3) He said to me, "Please wait for me here."
- .....
- (4) Our teacher said to us, "The earth goes around the sun."
- .....
- \*  (5) He told me that his brother had left for New York the day before.
- .....
- (6) My mother asked me what I wanted to eat for dinner.
- .....
- \*  (7) Ms. Brown told Bob not to be late for school again.
- .....
- (8) He asked me if it would be fine the next day.
- .....

## 24

## 仮定法

## 仮定法過去・仮定法過去完了・その他の仮定法(should[were to]～)

仮定や願望を表して、事実と違うことや事実と反対のことを述べるときの動詞の形を仮定法という。仮定法に対して、事実を事実として述べるときの動詞の形を直説法という。

## 1 仮定法過去

**a** 意味 「もし…なら～なのだが。」(現在の事実と反対のことを仮定)

**b** 文の形 《If + 主語 + 動詞の過去形, 主語 + 助動詞の過去形～。》

① If I **knew** it, I **could** tell you.

(もしそれを知っていたら、君に話すことができるのですが。)

= As I **don't** know it, I **cannot** tell you.

(わたしはそれを知らないなので、君に話せません。)

② If I **were**[was] rich, I **would** buy it.

(もし金持ちなら、それを買うのですが。)

**注意** 仮定法過去において be 動詞は、主語の人称・数に関係なく were を用いるのが基本。ただし、くだけた表現では、主語が 1 人称・3 人称単数のとき was を使うことも多い。

## 2 仮定法過去完了

**a** 意味 「もし…であったら、～であったろう。」(過去の事実と反対のことを仮定)

**b** 文の形 《If + 主語 + 過去完了形(had + 過去分詞), 主語 + 助動詞の過去形 + have + 過去分詞～。》

① If I **had known** it, I **would have told** you.

(もしそれを知っていたら、君に話したでしょう。)

= As I **didn't** know it, I **didn't** tell you.

(わたしはそれを知らなかったなので、君に話しませんでした。)

② If she **had got up** a little earlier, she **would have been** in time.

(もし彼女がもう少し早く起きていたら、間に合ったでしょう。)

## 3 その他の仮定法(should[were to]～)

**a** 意味 「万一…なら、～だろう。」(未来において起こりそうもないことを仮定)

**b** 文の形 ① 《If + 主語 + should …, 主語 + 助動詞の過去形(または現在形)～。》

② 《If + 主語 + were to …, 主語 + 助動詞の過去形～。》

① If he **should** fail, his father **would** help him.

(万一彼が失敗したら、彼の父親が彼を助けるでしょう。)

② If the sun **were to** rise in the west, she **might** apologize.

(万一太陽が西から昇ったら、彼女は謝るかもしれません。)

**注意** were to ～はまったく実現不可能な仮定から、実現の可能性のある仮定まで表すことができる。一方、should はまったく実現不可能な仮定には用いない。

## 仮定法を含む表現

### 1 I wish + 仮定法過去

- a** 意味 「～であるならなあ。」(現在の事実と反した願望を述べる表現)
- b** 文の形 《I wish + 主語 + (助)動詞の過去形～.》  
I wish I **were** a bird. (わたしが鳥であるならなあ。)  
= I am sorry that I am not a bird. (わたしは鳥ではなくて残念です。)

### 2 I wish + 仮定法過去完了

- a** 意味 「～であったらなあ。」(過去の事実と反した願望を述べる表現)
- b** 文の形 《I wish + 主語 + 過去完了形(had + 過去分詞)～.》  
I wish you **had been** there then.  
(君がそのときそこにいてくれていたらなあ。)  
= I am sorry that you were not there then.  
(君がそのときそこにいなかったのは残念です。)

### 3 as if[though] + 仮定法過去

- a** 意味 「まるで～であるかのように」
- b** 文の形 《… as if[though] + 主語 + (助)動詞の過去形～.》
- ① He speaks as if[though] he **knew** everything.  
(彼はまるですべてを知っているかのように話します。)
- ② He spoke as if[though] he **knew** everything.  
(彼はまるですべてを知っているかのように話しました。)
- 注意** as if[though] に続く仮定法過去は、主節の動詞が表す時と同じ時の内容を表す。

### 4 as if[though] + 仮定法過去完了

- a** 意味 「まるで～であったかのように」
- b** 文の形 《… as if[though] + 主語 + 過去完了形(had + 過去分詞)～.》
- ① She looks as if[though] she **had seen** something horrible.  
(彼女はまるでなにかおぞましいものでも見たかのような顔をしています。)
- ② She looked as if[though] she **had seen** something horrible.  
(彼女はまるでなにかおぞましいものでも見たかのような顔をしていました。)
- 注意** as if[though] に続く仮定法過去完了は、主節の動詞が表す時より前の時の内容を表す。

## 練成問題

**1** 《仮定法過去①》 次の英文を日本語に直しなさい。

(1) If I were not busy, I would visit him.

(

)

\*  (2) If she were here, she would be glad.

(

)

\*  (3) If he knew it, he would not come here.

(

)

(4) If I didn't have to do my homework, I could go shopping with you.

(

)

**2** 《仮定法過去②》 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

\*  (1) a As I am ill, I cannot go swimming.

b If I ..... not ill, I ..... go swimming.

(2) a It is rainy, so we cannot play outside.

b If it ..... sunny, we ..... play outside.

\*  (3) a As my sons do not study much, they cannot get high grades.

b If my sons ..... much, they ..... get high grades.

(4) a She has a lot of work to do, so she won't go out with us.

b If she ..... not have a lot of work to do, she ..... go out with us.

語句

(3) get high grades 高得点をとる

**3** 《仮定法過去完了①》 次の英文を日本語に直しなさい。

\*  (1) If I had been free, I would have called on him.

(

)

\*  (2) If you had helped me, I could have succeeded.

(

)

(3) If she had arrived here a little earlier, she could have caught the last train.

(

)

**4** 《仮定法過去完了②》 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

\*  (1) a As I was ill, I could not go on a picnic.

b If I ..... not ..... ill, I could have gone on a picnic.

\*  (2) a It was cold, so I did not go out.

b If it ..... not ..... cold, I would have gone out.

(3) a As I was old, I could not climb the mountain.

b If I ..... young, I could have climbed the mountain.

**5** 《その他の仮定法》 次の英文を日本語に直しなさい。

- \*  (1) If you should do such a thing, he would be angry with you.  
( )
- (2) If I should let him know about it, he would feel sad.  
( )
- \*  (3) If my father were to come back, my family would be surprised.  
( )
- (4) If it were to snow heavily in this area, the traffic would be terrible.  
( )

語句

(4) area 地域 traffic 交通 terrible ひどい

**6** 《仮定法を含む表現①》 次の英文を日本語に直しなさい。

- \*  (1) I feel as if I were in a foreign country.  
( )
- (2) He spoke as if he had done it himself.  
( )

**7** 《仮定法を含む表現②》 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- \*  (1) 彼女がここにいればなあ。  
I wish she ..... here.
- (2) 彼といっしょに映画に行けるといいなあ。  
I wish I ..... go to the movies with him.
- \*  (3) 若いころ、もっと一生懸命勉強していたらなあ。  
I wish I ..... harder when I was young.
- \*  (4) 彼はまるで何でも知っているかのように話します。  
He speaks ..... he ..... everything.
- (5) 彼女はまるでそれについて何も知らなかったかのように見えます。  
She looks ..... she ..... nothing about it.

**8** 《仮定法を含む表現③》 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- \*  (1) ① I'm sorry I cannot go with you.  
② I wish I ..... go with you.
- (2) ① I'm sorry I do not know how to get there.  
② I wish ..... how to get there.
- \*  (3) ① I'm sorry I did not attend the party.  
② I wish I ..... the party.

語句

(3) attend ... ...に出席する

# 発展問題

**1** 次の( )に入る最も適当な語(句)をそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

- \*  (1) If there ( ) no water, we could not live.  
 ア were イ is ウ are [ ]
- (2) If I were in Hawaii now, I ( ) go swimming. (函館ラ・サール)  
 ア would イ will ウ shall [ ]
- (3) If I ( ) in your place, I'd go to New York. (海城)  
 ア am イ were ウ would be [ ]
- \*  (4) If he had much money with him, he ( ) the book. (関西学院)  
 ア will buy イ buys ウ bought エ can buy オ could buy [ ]
- \*  (5) I wish I ( ) enough money then.  
 ア had イ had had ウ have [ ]
- \*  (6) James talks as if he ( ) everything. (明治大学付属明治)  
 ア knowing イ know ウ knew エ were known [ ]
- (7) I wish my mother ( ) living now. (桐朋)  
 ア were イ has been ウ is エ had been [ ]
- \*  (8) If I ( ① ) rich, I could ( ② ) money for the sufferers.  
 ① ア were イ had been ウ have been [ ]  
 ② ア donated イ have donated ウ had donated [ ]

**語句**

(8) sufferer 被災者 donate 寄付する

**2** 次の文とほぼ同じ内容を表すものをあとからそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

- \*  (1) If I were a bird, I could fly to you. (同志社)  
 ア As I am not a bird, I can't fly to you. イ As I am a bird, I can fly to you. [ ]  
 ウ As I was not a bird, I could not fly to you.
- (2) I wish I were a bird.  
 ア I am happy, because I am not a bird. イ I wish to catch a bird. [ ]  
 ウ I am sorry I am not a bird. エ I am sorry I am a bird.
- \*  (3) あんなふうに泳げたらいいなあ。 (明治大学付属明治)  
 ア I wish I could swim like that. イ I hope I could swim like that. [ ]  
 ウ I wish I am able to swim like that.
- (4) 彼はまるで暴君のように振る舞いました。  
 ア He behaved as if he had been a tyrant. [ ]  
 イ He behaved as if he were a tyrant.  
 ウ He behaves as if he is a tyrant.  
 エ He behaves as if he were a tyrant.

**語句**

(4) behave 振る舞う tyrant 暴君

3 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) ① As I have no money, I can't buy it. 〈立命館〉  
② If I ..... money, I ..... buy it.
- (2) ① As I don't know his address, I can't write to him. 〈灘〉  
② If I ..... his address, I ..... write to him.
- (3) ① I am sorry I cannot play tennis. 〈慶應義塾志木〉  
② I ..... I ..... play tennis.
- (4) ① I'm afraid I can't speak English as well as he. 〈明治大学付属明治〉  
② I ..... I ..... English as well as he.
- \*  (5) ① As I could swim well, I was not drowned. 〈甲陽学院〉  
② If I had not been able to swim well, I ..... been drowned.

語句

(5) be drowned 溺れる

4 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) もしわたしが道を知っていれば、あなたをそこに連れていくのに。 〈明治大学付属明治〉  
If I ..... the way, I ..... take you there.
- \*  (2) 万一雨が降れば、わたしたちはピクニックに行かない。 〈広島大学附属〉  
If it ..... rain, we ..... go on a picnic.
- \*  (3) もし彼女がそこにいたら、わたしたちは試合に勝つことができましたでしょうに。  
If she ..... there, we ..... won the game.
- \*  (4) あの人はまるで医者であるかのように話します。 〈お茶の水女子大学附属〉  
That man talks ..... if he ..... a doctor.
- (5) もし万一仕事に失敗したら、どうなさいますか。 〈開成〉  
What ..... you do if you ..... fail in business?
- (6) あのドイツ人は日本語をまるで母語のように話す。 〈灘〉  
That German speaks Japanese .....  
his mother tongue.

語句

(6) ドイツ人 German 母語 mother tongue

5 次の日本語を英語に直しなさい。

- \*  (1) 君といっしょにそのパーティーに行けるといいのですが。  
.....
- (2) その歌を上手に歌えたらいいのだが。 〈慶應義塾〉  
.....
- \*  (3) もし彼女の電話番号を知っていれば、すぐにあなたに教えてあげるのに。  
.....
- (4) 水がなければ何物も生存できないだろう。 〈開成〉  
.....

1 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1)(a) It was very cold, but we went out. (学習院)  
 (b) ..... it was very cold, we went out.
- \*  (2)(a) You will break this tool if you don't use it carefully. (駿台甲府)  
 (b) Use this tool carefully, ..... you will break it.
- \*  (3)(a) My mother can speak Chinese as well as Japanese. (同志社国際)  
 (b) My mother can speak ..... Japanese ..... also Chinese.
- (4)(a) Susan doesn't have either dictionaries or books with her. (立教)  
 (b) Susan has ..... dictionaries ..... books with her.
- \*  (5)(a) Mary is very kind, so everyone loves her. (東明館)  
 (b) Mary is ..... kind ..... everyone loves her.
- \*  (6)(a) Her question is easier than yours. (東海)  
 (b) Your question is more ..... than .....
- (7)(a) She is the youngest of all the students. (青雲)  
 (b) She is ..... than ..... other student.
- (8)(a) Ann is not as young as Sam. Sam is older than Jim. (日本大学)  
 (b) Jim is ..... of the three.
- (9)(a) My brother speaks English better than I. (法政大学第一)  
 (b) I don't speak English ..... my brother.
- (10)(a) He ran as fast as possible. (東海)  
 (b) He ran as fast as .....
- \*  (11)(a) Don't play baseball in this park. (上宮太子)  
 (b) You ..... play baseball in this park.
- \*  (12)(a) How about going shopping together? (駿台甲府)  
 (b) ..... we go shopping together?
- \*  (13)(a) It is impossible for him to take care of himself. (成城学園)  
 (b) He is not ..... to take care of himself.
- (14)(a) It wasn't necessary for you to help Ken with homework. (穎明館)  
 (b) You ..... to help Ken with homework.
- \*  (15)(a) Mother became ill last week and she is still ill.  
 (b) Mother ..... ill ..... last week.
- (16)(a) John went to school, and he isn't here now. (駒込)  
 (b) John ..... to school.

2 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、\_\_\_\_\_に適する語を書きなさい。

- \*  (1) a This is the first trip to China for Keiko.  
b Keiko \_\_\_\_\_ never \_\_\_\_\_ to China before. 〈学習院〉
- (2) a We haven't heard from him for a few years.  
b He hasn't \_\_\_\_\_ to us for a few years. 〈土佐塾〉
- \*  (3) a I am free this afternoon.  
b I have \_\_\_\_\_ do this afternoon. 〈土佐塾〉
- \*  (4) a When I heard the news, I was happy.  
b I was happy \_\_\_\_\_ the news. 〈滝〉
- (5) a Remember to write to me soon.  
b Don't \_\_\_\_\_ to write to me soon. 〈滝〉
- \*  (6) a We can read this book easily.  
b It is easy \_\_\_\_\_ read this book. 〈法政大学第二〉
- (7) a Shall I write a letter in English for you?  
b Do you want \_\_\_\_\_ write a letter in English for you? 〈穎明館〉
- (8) a My mother said to us, "Don't do that again."  
b My mother told us \_\_\_\_\_ do that again. 〈土佐塾〉
- \*  (9) a I can't go with you because I'm very busy.  
b I am \_\_\_\_\_ busy \_\_\_\_\_ go with you. 〈駒込〉
- (10) a We were surprised that he could use this machine.  
b We were surprised that he knew \_\_\_\_\_ to use this machine. 〈駿台甲府〉
- (11) a I wonder where we should go skiing next weekend.  
b I wonder \_\_\_\_\_ go skiing next weekend. 〈大妻中野〉
- (12) a He kindly showed me the way to the station.  
b He was \_\_\_\_\_ to show me the way to the station. 〈関西学院〉
- \*  (13) a It is important to take care of old people.  
b \_\_\_\_\_ care of old people \_\_\_\_\_ important. 〈成城学園〉
- \*  (14) a We swam in the sea. We enjoyed it very much.  
b We \_\_\_\_\_ in the sea very much. 〈明治大学附属中野〉
- (15) a Would you like to take a walk in the park?  
b How \_\_\_\_\_ a walk in the park? 〈同志社国際〉
- (16) a You shouldn't be afraid that you will make a mistake.  
b \_\_\_\_\_ be afraid \_\_\_\_\_ a mistake. 〈同志社国際〉
- \*  (17) a Mr. Gilder is our English teacher.  
b Mr. Gilder \_\_\_\_\_ English to \_\_\_\_\_. 〈土佐塾〉
- \*  (18) a We had much snow last night.  
b \_\_\_\_\_ snowed a lot last night. 〈学習院〉

3 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、\_\_\_\_\_に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) a Will you go to Fujisawa by car? (湘南学園)  
b Will you \_\_\_\_\_ to Fujisawa?
- \*  (2) a How many books do you have in your room? (青山学院)  
b How many books \_\_\_\_\_ in your room?
- \*  (3) a He bought her a book. (京華)  
b He bought a book \_\_\_\_\_ her.
- (4) a She became happy to hear the news. (成城学園)  
b The news \_\_\_\_\_.
- (5) a Somebody stole his car during the night. (法政大学第二)  
b His car \_\_\_\_\_ during the night.
- \*  (6) a Mr. Brown gave his wife a birthday present. (土佐)  
b A birthday present \_\_\_\_\_ his wife by Mr. Brown.
- (7) a What did Nancy find in the pond? (郁文館)  
b What \_\_\_\_\_ by Nancy in the pond?
- (8) a We must keep our classroom clean. (土佐塾)  
b Our classroom must \_\_\_\_\_ clean.
- (9) a I was surprised that they visited me suddenly. (佼成学園)  
b I was surprised \_\_\_\_\_ their sudden visit.
- \*  (10) a That girl is Mary. She is singing with Tom. (関西学院)  
b That girl \_\_\_\_\_ with Tom \_\_\_\_\_ Mary.
- \*  (11) a Ken drew a picture. It was very nice. (高知学芸)  
b The picture \_\_\_\_\_ Ken was very nice.
- (12) a Their car is parked over there. (青山学院)  
b The car \_\_\_\_\_ is parked over there is \_\_\_\_\_.
- \*  (13) a Ellen is a girl with long hair. (学習院)  
b Ellen is a girl \_\_\_\_\_ long hair.
- (14) a This picture was drawn by Mr. Yamamoto. (学習院)  
b This is the picture Mr. Yamamoto \_\_\_\_\_.
- \*  (15) a I have an American friend and his name is Dick. (青雲)  
b I have an American friend \_\_\_\_\_ is Dick.
- (16) a The book with a red cover is mine. (愛光)  
b The book \_\_\_\_\_ is red \_\_\_\_\_ to me.
- \*  (17) a Where does Ken live? Do you know?  
b Do you know where \_\_\_\_\_ ?
- (18) a I don't know his name. (早稲田実業)  
b I don't know \_\_\_\_\_ is.

4 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- \*  (1) a) Tell me the meaning of this word. (土佐塾)  
b) Tell me ..... this word means.
- \*  (2) a) Do you know her age? (森村学園)  
b) Do you know ..... she is?
- \*  (3) a) How well they swim! (早稲田実業)  
b) ..... good ..... they are!
- (4) a) She has studied English for thirty minutes.  
b) She has studied English for ..... hour.
- \*  (5) a) May is one of his old friends. (佼成学園)  
b) May is an old friend of .....
- \*  (6) a) She didn't have anything in her bag. (学習院)  
b) She had ..... in her bag.
- (7) a) Did you have a good time? (湘南学園)  
b) Did you enjoy ..... ?
- (8) a) You can help me. I can help you, too. (高知学芸)  
b) You and I can help .....
- \*  (9) a) I have never visited this city before. (土佐塾)  
b) This is ..... visit to this city.
- (10) a) My father can ski very well. (同志社)  
b) My father is very ..... skiing.
- \*  (11) a) This is one of the movies I like very much. (成城学園)  
b) This is one of my ..... movies.
- \*  (12) a) When was Kinkakuji temple built? (城北)  
b) How ..... Kinkakuji temple?
- (13) a) Mr. Smith is a very careful driver. (土佐塾)  
b) Mr. Smith ..... very .....
- \*  (14) a) Neither you nor I am rich. (日本大学)  
b) You are not rich. I am not rich, .....
- \*  (15) a) Do you know the girl wearing a white hat? (土佐塾)  
b) Do you know the girl ..... a white hat on?
- (16) a) How is the weather in Kyoto? (大阪星光学院)  
b) ..... is the weather ..... in Kyoto?
- (17) a) I came to know him while I was staying in London. (開成)  
b) I came to know him ..... my ..... in London.
- (18) a) I like music very much. (土佐)  
b) I ..... very ..... music.

# 発展問題

**1** 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- \*  (1) (a) It is certain that he is ill. 〈東海〉  
       (b) He ..... be ill.
- \*  (2) (a) Could you tell me your name and address, please? 〈大阪星光学院〉  
       (b) ..... have your name and address, please?
- (3) (a) Tom is older than Nancy by three years. 〈明治大学附属中野〉  
       (b) Nancy is ..... than Tom.
- \*  (4) (a) No one is as beautiful as she. 〈日本大学〉  
       (b) She is the ..... all.
- (5) (a) Tom is the tallest of all the boys in his class. 〈成城学園〉  
       (b) ..... in his class is taller than Tom.
- \*  (6) (a) My uncle died five months ago. 〈早稲田実業〉  
       (b) My uncle ..... for five months.
- (7) (a) They went to the airport to see their father off and came back just now. 〈土佐塾〉  
       (b) They ..... just ..... to the airport to see their father off.
- \*  (8) (a) Ten years have passed since we saw him last. 〈滝〉  
       (b) We ..... him for ten years.
- (9) (a) Give me a pencil or something. 〈関西学院〉  
       (b) Give me something ..... write .....
- (10) (a) Thank you very much for your nice present. 〈城北〉  
       (b) ..... is kind ..... give me a nice present.
- \*  (11) (a) He was so poor that he could not buy the violin. 〈学習院〉  
       (b) He was not rich ..... to buy the violin.
- (12) (a) The suitcases were too heavy for him to carry. 〈慶應義塾〉  
       (b) The suitcases were so .....  
       .....
- \*  (13) (a) He continued to read the story.  
       (b) He didn't ..... the story.
- (14) (a) Though he came near my house, he did not visit me. 〈日本大学〉  
       (b) He came near my house ..... me.
- (15) (a) We went to Hokkaido by air. 〈立教新座〉  
       (b) We ..... Hokkaido.
- ▶  (16) (a) Do you mind my opening the window? 〈慶應義塾志木〉  
       (b) Do you mind ..... the window?
- ▶  (17) (a) Five minutes' walk brought me to the park. 〈大妻中野〉  
       (b) It ..... me five minutes to walk to the park.

2 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) ① If you get on this train, you will get there. (郁文館)  
② This train will ..... you there.
- \*  (2) ① Nancy likes tea better than coffee. (中央大学附属杉並)  
② Nancy ..... tea to coffee.
- (3) ① How much did it cost you? (郁文館)  
② How much money did you ..... for it?
- (4) ① What's your weight? (大阪星光学院)  
② How ..... do you .....
- \*  (5) ① She lived happily. (法政大学第二)  
② She lived a happy .....
- (6) ① Soon I got the news that he had succeeded. (慶應義塾志木)  
② Soon I got the news of .....
- (7) ① How well she can make meals! (青山学院)  
② ..... a good ..... she is!
- (8) ① He cannot speak English well. (大阪教育大学附属平野)  
② He is a .....
- (9) ① Why were you so happy?  
② What ..... so happy?
- \*  (10) ① My birthday is February 5. (大阪女学院)  
② I ..... February 5.
- \*  (11) ① This is the vase the boy broke. (駒込)  
② This is the vase ..... the boy.
- (12) ① We often talk with the foreign student who lives next door. (法政大学第一)  
② We often talk with the foreign student ..... next door.
- \*  (13) ① This is the hotel. Jane stays at it. (日本大学)  
② This is the hotel ..... Jane stays .....
- (14) ① Don't speak Japanese in this class. (土佐)  
② Japanese must ..... in this class.
- \*  (15) ① I have never seen such a tall tree as this. (穎明館)  
② This is ..... tree I've ..... seen.
- \*  (16) ① India is the country I'd like to visit most. (慶應義塾)  
② I'd like to visit ..... than any other .....
- (17) ① The man ..... painted the picture died one hundred years ago. (大阪女学院)  
② The painter of the picture has ..... one hundred years.
- \*  (18) ① My son was very excited about the plan for the spring vacation. (学習院)  
② The plan for the spring vacation was very ..... my son.

3 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、\_\_\_\_\_に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) a How much is this old stamp? 〈青山学院〉  
b \_\_\_\_\_ is the \_\_\_\_\_ of this old stamp?
- \*  (2) a I don't know what they call this flower in French. 〈青山学院〉  
b I don't know the \_\_\_\_\_ of this flower.
- (3) a Tom couldn't tell how many students he has in his school. 〈青山学院〉  
b Tom couldn't tell \_\_\_\_\_ of the students in his school.
- (4) a Do you remember which girl gave you the flower? 〈慶應義塾〉  
b Do you remember the name \_\_\_\_\_ the \_\_\_\_\_ gave you the flower?
- \*  (5) a He is the youngest of the three boys. 〈土佐塾〉  
b He is younger than \_\_\_\_\_ two boys.
- \*  (6) a Pat and Ken are good players, but Andy is the best. 〈愛光〉  
b Pat and Ken are good players, but \_\_\_\_\_ of them can play as \_\_\_\_\_ as Andy.
- \*  (7) a He has never visited any foreign countries. 〈東海〉  
b He has never been \_\_\_\_\_.
- \*  (8) a How many times do you go to the library in a week?  
b How \_\_\_\_\_ do you go to the library in a week?
- (9) a She cut the cake with a kitchen knife. 〈駿台甲府〉  
b She cut the cake \_\_\_\_\_ using a kitchen knife.
- \*  (10) a I first went to the United States when I was twenty. 〈愛光〉  
b I first went to the United States \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_ twenty.
- (11) a Why are you saving so much money? 〈大阪星光学院〉  
b \_\_\_\_\_ are you saving so much money \_\_\_\_\_?
- (12) a How about asking your teacher? 〈同志社〉  
b \_\_\_\_\_ ask your teacher?
- (13) a Because I got up late, I missed the train. 〈城北埼玉〉  
b I got up too late to be \_\_\_\_\_ for the train.
- \*  (14) a Knowing is one thing, and teaching is another. 〈立教新座〉  
b Knowing is quite \_\_\_\_\_ from teaching.
- (15) a Please tell me when and where you were born. 〈青雲〉  
b Please tell me the date and \_\_\_\_\_ of your \_\_\_\_\_.
- (16) a How far is it from Tokyo to Osaka? 〈青雲〉  
b \_\_\_\_\_ is the distance from Tokyo to Osaka?
- (17) a He is famous because he is the best golfer. 〈土佐塾〉  
b He is famous \_\_\_\_\_ the best golfer.

4 次の各組の文がほぼ同じ内容になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1)(a) My computer is out of order. 〈学習院〉  
    (b) Something is ..... my computer.
- \*  (2)(a) The doctor said to my father, "Don't smoke any more." 〈明治大学附属中野〉  
    (b) The doctor ordered my father to ..... smoking.
- \*  (3)(a) His story was too strange for anybody to believe. 〈近畿大学附属〉  
    (b) His story was ..... strange that ..... could believe it.
- (4)(a) He will surely win the race. 〈愛光〉  
    (b) ..... that he will win the race.
- (5)(a) He is proud that he is a doctor. 〈清風南海〉  
    (b) He is proud ..... a doctor.
- \*  (6)(a) Someone stole his bag at the station. 〈久留米大学附設〉  
    (b) He ..... his bag ..... at the station.
- \*  (7)(a) Shakespeare used to live in that house. 〈慶應義塾〉  
    (b) That's the house .....
- \*  (8)(a) As he did not know what to do, he was about to cry. 〈久留米大学附設〉  
    (b) ..... what to do, he was about to cry.
- \*  (9)(a) My teacher said to me, "Be quiet." 〈土佐〉  
    (b) My teacher ..... me ..... quiet.
- (10)(a) Mr. Kato said to her, "How are you?" 〈土佐塾〉  
    (b) Mr. Kato asked her how .....
- (11)(a) "Where do you live?" Nancy said to Peter. 〈慶應義塾〉  
    (b) Nancy asked Peter where .....
- \*  (12)(a) Jim said to me, "I will wait for you at the station." 〈久留米大学附設〉  
    (b) Jim ..... me that ..... wait for ..... at the station.
- \*  (13)(a) It is rainy, so I cannot go out now. 〈久留米大学附設〉  
    (b) If it ..... fine, I ..... go out now.
- \*  (14)(a) Mary, ..... worked very hard, failed math in the last exam. 〈開成〉  
    (b) Mary, ..... she worked very hard, failed math in the last exam.
- ☐  (15)(a) He is quite a stranger to me. 〈城北〉  
    (b) I ..... know him .....
- ☐  (16)(a) I could not sleep all night ..... of the noise in the street. 〈開成〉  
    (b) The noise in the street ..... me awake all night.
- ☐  (17)(a) We'll soon meet again. 〈久留米大学附設〉  
    (b) It won't ..... we meet again.
- ☐  (18)(a) His carelessness caused the accident. 〈開成〉  
    (b) If he had been more ....., the accident would not have .....

1 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、( )内の語句を並べかえなさい。

- (1) 信号を無視して渡ってはいけないよ。 (郁文館)  
( the street / the light / don't / while / cross / red / is ).
- .....
- (2) 雨が降り出さないうちに帰りましょう。〔1語不足〕 (同志社)  
( back / begins / go / it / let's / rain / to ).
- .....
- \*  (3) 今すぐ出ないと列車に乗り遅れますよ。 (大妻中野)  
( right / you / train / start / the / miss / will / or / away ).
- .....
- \*  (4) そのコーヒーはこすぎて飲めませんでした。〔1語不足〕 (法政大学第一)  
( couldn't / was / that / I / drink / it / the coffee / strong ).
- .....
- \*  (5) 高校を卒業するとすぐに彼はオーストラリアに行きました。〔1語不要〕 (佼成学園)  
( left / as / as / so / he / soon ) high school, he went to Australia.
- .....
- (6) あなたはそうする必要はないと思います。 (日本大学)  
( don't / to / afraid / that / you / do / I'm / have ).
- .....
- \*  (7) わたしはすべての学科のうちで英語が1番好きです。  
( best / the / the / like / all / English / I / of / subjects ).
- .....
- (8) 先週ほど寒くありません。 (郁文館)  
( not / as / as / it / was / is / cold / it ) last week.
- .....
- \*  (9) 昨年の夏は今年の夏よりもずっと雨が多かった。〔1語不要〕 (日本大学)  
Last summer ( rain / had / very / this / much / we / summer / than / more ).
- .....
- \*  (10) 来年は英語を話せるようになりますよ。  
You ( be / year / English / will / next / speak / able / to ).
- .....
- (11) かさを持っていったほうがいいよ。〔1語不足〕 (大阪教育大学附属平野)  
You ( better / you / take / umbrella / had / your ).
- .....

2 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、( )内の語句を並べかえなさい。

- \*  (1) そのときからわたしは英語を習いたいと思っていました。 (日本大学)  
( learn / then / wanted / since / I / have / to / English ).
- .....
- (2) あなたは今までに京都に何回行ったことがありますか。  
How ( Kyoto / many / to / you / been / have / times )?
- .....
- (3) 何か読むのにおもしろい本を持っていますか。 (駿台甲府)  
( have / book / read / do / to / an / you / interesting )?
- .....
- \*  (4) あなたにわたしの家へ来てもらいたい。〔1語不足〕 (文教大学付属)  
( house / I / to / you / my / come / to ).
- .....
- (5) 先生は彼に2度と遅刻をしないように言った。 (江戸川学園取手)  
The teacher ( late / told / be / him / to / not ) again.
- .....
- \*  (6) 子供がこの通りで遊ぶのは危険です。〔1語不要〕 (日本大学豊山)  
( play / children / is / are / dangerous / it / for / to ) on this street.
- .....
- (7) 先生はわたしにその辞書の使い方を教えてくださいました。〔1語不要〕 (佼成学園)  
The teacher ( to / me / taught / how / use / way ) the dictionary.
- .....
- \*  (8) 彼は親切にもわたしたちに車を貸してくれました。 (巣鴨)  
( kind / lend / car / he / was / his / enough / to / us ).
- .....
- (9) 物語を書くことはあなたにとっておもしろいことですか。  
( you / stories / to / is / interesting / writing )?
- .....
- \*  (10) わたしは昨夜、宿題もせずに眠ってしまった。〔1語不足〕 (城北)  
Last night ( I / my / went / sleep / homework / without / to ).
- .....
- (11) 彼が成功したという知らせを聞いてわたしはうれしくなった。 (日本大学第三)  
( success / happy / of / the news / made / me / his ).
- .....
- \*  (12) わたしは父に笑われてしまった。 (都文館)  
( laughed / was / by / I / my father / at ).
- .....

**3** 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、( )内の語句を並べかえなさい。

- \*  (1) 彼はブラッキーという犬を飼っています。 (駿台甲府)  
( Blackie / dog / has / a / called / he ).
- .....
- \*  (2) わたしの母と話をしている女の子はナンシーです。 (洛星)  
( girl / is / mother / my / Nancy / talking / the / with ).
- .....
- (3) わたしを英語を教えてくれるような大学生に紹介してください。 [ 1 語不要 ] (俊成学園)  
Will you please introduce me ( can / whom / a college student / who / teach / to ) me  
English?
- .....
- \*  (4) これが彼が 10 年前に書いた本ですか。 (洛星)  
Is ( years / he / ten / the book / wrote / this / that ) ago?
- .....
- (5) 両親が 10 回富士山に登ったことのある友人がいます。 [ 1 語不足 ] (早稲田実業)  
I ( parents / have / friend / have / times / a / climbed / ten / Mt. Fuji ).
- .....
- \*  (6) 君はこれが何であるか知っていますか。 (駿台甲府)  
( this / you / is / know / what / do )?
- .....
- \*  (7) ここから駅までどのくらいありますか。 [ 1 語不要 ] (洛星)  
( it / is / the / here / far / how / to / long / from ) station?
- .....
- (8) この小説を読むことに興味を持っている生徒はほとんどいません。 [ 1 語不足 ] (同志社)  
( are / in / interested / this novel / reading / students ).
- .....
- (9) ぼくの弟は 3 歳年下です。 [ 1 語不足 ] (開成)  
My brother is ( I / than / three / younger ) years.
- .....
- \*  (10) タクシーがその病院の前で止まりました。 (湘南学園)  
( the / a / hospital / in / taxi / of / stopped / front ).
- .....
- (11) わたしは家族を養うことにした。 [ 1 語不要 ] (桐光学園)  
I ( after / up / for / look / made / my / to / mind ) my family.
- .....
- (12) その仕事を正午までに終わらせる必要はありません。 (明治学院)  
The work ( be / noon / doesn't / before / to / have / finished ).
- .....

4 次の( )内の語句を並べかえて、意味の通る英文を作りなさい。

- (1) ( better / dog / get / hope / I / your / will ) soon. 〈日本女子大学附属〉  
.....
- \* (2) You ( saw / busy / last / I / very / you / when / looked ) night. 〈法政大学第一〉  
.....
- \* (3) ( is / more / than / that / this dictionary / useful ) one. 〈日本女子大学附属〉  
.....
- (4) The heart is ( all / part / in / most / of / important / the ). [ 1 語不要 ] 〈中央大学附属杉並〉  
.....
- (5) ( at / to / him / the / people / see / airport / many / came / off ). 〈豊島岡女子学園〉  
.....
- \* (6) I asked my teacher ( buy / dictionary / which / to ). 〈青雲〉  
.....
- (7) ( near / not / the / go / told / he / us / to ) dog. 〈東海〉  
.....
- \* (8) She is ( home / early / too / come / busy / to ). 〈弘学館〉  
.....
- (9) Would ( for / me / you / window / the / mind / shutting )? 〈東海〉  
.....
- (10) What ( a / rare / sister / your / watch / wears )! 〈日本女子大学附属〉  
.....
- \* (11) What ( called / in / is / flower / this / English )? 〈弘学館〉  
.....
- \* (12) ( by / made / my sister / the cake / very good / was ). 〈日本女子大学附属〉  
.....
- (13) A : ( by / is / standing / the man / the window / who )? 〈洛南〉  
B : It's Mr. Nakano.  
.....
- (14) ( there / see / over / is / you / whom / boy / the ) Ben. 〈東海〉  
.....
- \* (15) ( anything / do / you / is / I / for / there / can )? 〈土佐塾〉  
.....
- (16) What ( country / want / visit / foreign / does / to / she )?  
.....
- \* (17) Do you know ( leave / John / will / Japan / when )?  
.....
- \* (18) Tommy will ( help / with / homework / you / your / about ). [ 1 語不要 ] 〈中央大学附属杉並〉  
.....

## 発展問題

1 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、( )内の語句を並べかえなさい。

- \*  (1) 東京は世界で最も大きい都市の1つです。 〈駿台甲府〉  
( the world / Tokyo / the biggest / of / in / is / one / cities ).
- 
- (2) 琵琶湖は日本で1番大きな湖である。〔1語不足〕 〈法政大学女子〉  
( than / Lake Biwa / other / is / no / Japan / lake in ).
- 
- \*  (3) その湖でとれた魚は食べないほうがよいでしょう。 〈巣鴨〉  
( better / caught / we / not / the / lake / in / the / fish / had / eat ).
- 
- (4) 佐藤さんは手紙を送るために郵便局に行って来たところです。 〈東京純心女子〉  
Mr. Sato has ( to / to / the post office / just / send / been / a letter ).
- 
- \*  (5) わたしの祖父が死んでから10年になります。〔1語不要〕 〈駒込〉  
Ten ( died / dead / passed / my grandfather / years / have / since ).
- 
- (6) その子供たちには遊ぶ友達がいません。〔1語不足〕  
( friends / play / to / no / have / the / children ).
- 
- (7) 彼女は新しい家を買えるように一生懸命働いた。〔1語不足〕 〈国学院久我山〉  
( house / new / buy / she / a / in / to / worked / hard ).
- 
- (8) あまりにも驚いたので、わたしは何も言えなかった。〔1語不要〕 〈東洋大学附属牛久〉  
( surprised / to / was / can't / too / say / I / anything ).
- 
- \*  (9) 手伝ってくれてありがとうございました。〔1語不要〕 〈森村学園〉  
It ( help / kind / you / me / was / to / of / for ).
- 
- \*  (10) 彼はその仕事を独力でするほどには丈夫ではなかった。 〈明治学院〉  
He ( to / not / for / was / himself / the work / enough / do / strong ).
- 
- \*  (11) 彼の絵を理解するのは難しいと思います。 〈日本大学〉  
( understand / it / think / his paintings / I / is / hard / to ).
-

2 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、( )内の語句を並べかえなさい。

- \*  (1) そんな間違いをするなんて君は何ておろかなんだ。 (明治学院)  
How ( such / you / a mistake / are / foolish / make / to )!  
-----
- \*  (2) 昨夜は3時間テレビを見て過ごしました。  
I spent ( night / hours / last / watching / three / TV ).  
-----
- (3) この道を行けば空港に出られます。〔1語不要〕 (慶應義塾)  
( take / if / the / airport / will / road / this / to / you ).  
-----
- (4) トムは病気で寝ているらしい。 (近畿大学附属)  
( is / it / in / sick / that / Tom / said / bed / is ).  
-----
- (5) ここから屋根が見える家がジェーンの家です。 (近畿大学附属)  
( roof / the house / is / whose / from / you / Jane's / here / see ).  
-----
- (6) おじいさんが世話をしているバラをみんなが見に来ます。〔1語不足〕 (早稲田実業)  
Many ( roses / grandfather / are / by / to / the / care / come / of / people / see / which / my ).  
-----
- \*  (7) だれもあした何が起こるかわかりません。〔1語不要〕  
( one / happen / what / no / will / tomorrow / knows / not ).  
-----
- (8) 彼のかばんをあけて、その中に何がはいっているか見せてくれた。 (土佐塾)  
( show / his / it / what / he / bag / was / opened / in / to / me ).  
-----
- \*  (9) あなたは彼が今どこにいると思いますか。  
( you / he / do / is / now / think / where )?  
-----
- (10) きとうよりきょうの方がずっと気分がいいではありませんか。〔1語不要〕  
( better / yesterday / don't / feel / more / today / much / than / you )?  
-----
- \*  (11) 当地の気候はニューヨークより暖かです。 (甲陽学院)  
The ( is / New York / climate / than / here / that / warmer / of ).  
-----
- Ⓜ  (12) その男の子はおもちゃがいっぱい入った箱を運んでいました。〔1語不足〕 (同志社)  
( a box / boy / carrying / of / the / toys / was ).  
-----

**3** 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、( )内の語句を並べかえなさい。

\*  (1) その本を書くのにわたしは2年かかった。 (栄東)  
( the book / two years / write / took / me / to / it ).

\*  (2) 彼は大雨のため授業に遅刻しました。〔1語不要〕  
He ( late / it / because / for / of / was / class / the ) the heavy rain.

\*  (3) お母様のお作りになった美しい人形を送ってくださってありがとうございました。 (ラ・サール)  
Thank ( beautiful / by / doll / for / made / me / mother / sending / the / you / your ).

\*  (4) 彼女はお母さんより料理が上手だと自慢している。 (日本大学)  
( her mother / of / is / cooking / proud / than / she / better ).

\*  (5) わたしたちは彼を待つしかないのです。〔1語不要〕 (富士見)  
( we / that / for / all / do / him / can / wait / is / to / only ).

(6) その店のケーキはとてもおいしいのでどれを買ったらよいか決めにくい。 (早稲田実業)  
The cakes ( which / hard / to / to / the / that / sold / so / shop / it's / good / decide / buy / at / are ).

(7) 目がさめたら病院のベッドに寝ていた。〔1語不足〕 (開成)  
I woke up ( to / myself / lying ) on the bed in a hospital.

\*  (8) わたしたちは荷物を空港まで送ってもらうつもりです。〔1語不足〕 (開成)  
We'll ( luggage / sent / our ) to the airport.

(9) その歌が日本人の歌手に歌われるのを聞いたことがない。 (灘)  
( I / a Japanese singer / by / heard / have / never / sung / the song ).

(10) わたしは正夫に嫌いなものを無理やり食べさせた。 (青雲)  
( I / he / eat / like / made / what / didn't / Masao ).

●  (11) 彼は目を閉じてその音楽に聞きっていました。 (明治学院)  
He ( closed / was / eyes / listening / his / music / the / to / with ).

●  (12) この本を読めば、理科を勉強するおもしろさがわかりますよ。 (海城)  
This book ( you / is / how / to / tell / study science / it / interesting / will ).

4 次の( )内の語句を並べかえて、意味の通る英文を作りなさい。

(1) This park is ( large as / that / as / one / times / three ). 〈弘学館〉

.....  
\*  (2) Read ( as / as / books / can / many / you ). 〈青雲〉

.....  
 (3) It ( I / time / is / saw / you / last / a / since / long ). 〈東海〉

.....  
\*  (4) He got up ( the / train / to / first / enough / catch / early ). 〈弘学館〉

.....  
 (5) It's nine o'clock. ( children / bed / time / is / to / to / it / go / for / little ). 〈洛南〉

.....  
\*  (6) A : ( go / many / the / you / do / movies / often / how / to )? [ 1 語不要 ] 〈豊島岡女子学園〉  
B : Once or twice a month.

.....  
 (7) A : Can I help you? 〈法政大学第一〉  
B : Yes, ( this / leather jacket / for / black / looking / I'm / like / a ), but I can't see one in my size.

.....  
\*  (8) He told me ( be / afraid / not / of / mistakes / making / to ).

.....  
 (9) ( you / introduce / we / to / like / us / would / to / yourself ). 〈土佐塾〉

.....  
\*  (10) This is ( CD / ever / the / to / have / I / best / listened ).

.....  
\*  (11) ( yesterday / you / is / about / the / this / were / book / talking )? 〈土佐塾〉

.....  
 (12) ( the / invited / came / of / most / people / I ), and we had a very good time. 〈洛南〉

.....  
\*  (13) ( tell / on / me / I / where / can / get / you / should ) the bus for the zoo? 〈洛南〉

.....  
 (14) ( take / and / hours / it / a / to / will / there / one / half / get ). 〈土佐塾〉

.....  
\*  (15) ( play / the / don't / let / with / baby ) my glasses. He may break them. 〈法政大学第一〉

.....  
 (16) The car ( for / has / our house / the last / days / which / to / been / five / belongs / outside ) my brother. 〈法政大学第一〉

1 次の中から、正しい英文を4つ選び、記号で答えなさい。 [ ] [ ] [ ] [ ]

- ア There is little water in the glass.      イ You must come here till seven.  
 ウ I have written it just now.              エ He was laughed by all his friends.  
 オ He left for New York last night.        カ I like it better than anything else.  
 キ Birds are singing among the trees.

2 次の中から、正しい英文を3つ選び、記号で答えなさい。 (愛光)

- [ ] [ ] [ ] [ ]  
 ア Cheese cuts easily with a knife.  
 イ My mother cooks good meals to us.  
 ウ You have no class tomorrow, don't you?  
 エ Our school lays in the western part of the city.  
 オ It is bad manners to speak with your mouth full.  
 カ Please come home before it will get dark.  
 キ She ordered three books from New York.  
 ク School begins from April 8.  
 ケ I saw an excited movie last night.  
 コ We don't need many furnitures here.

3 次の各組の文が両方とも正しいければ○で、両方とも間違っていれば×で、どちらかだけが間違っている場合はその記号で答えなさい。 (大阪女学院)

- (1) ア I am difficult to read an English book. [ ]  
 イ I am interesting in Japanese history.  
 (2) ア My pen is not as good as you. [ ]  
 イ Tom runs the fastest of the class.  
 (3) ア Let's go swimming, shall we? [ ]  
 イ Do kind to old people.  
 (4) ア I have never eaten such a big cake. [ ]  
 イ This is the prettiest cat that I have ever seen.  
 (5) ア Was this camera made in a Japanese man? [ ]  
 イ The street is covered with snow.  
 (6) ア I don't know when did he come home. [ ]  
 イ Tell me who is that tall man.  
 (7) ア I went on reading the book. [ ]  
 イ It stopped to rain.

4 次の文の下線部から誤りがあるものをそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。 (関西学院)

- (1) I アwould like to go out for イshopping. I will ウbe back エby six o'clock. [ ]  
When someone オcall on me, please tell him that I will come back soon.
- (2) Japanese is the only language アthat is spoken in Japan. Some countries [ ]  
have イmore than one language. For example, ウin some parts of Canada,  
both English and French エis spoken. Many people there can speak オthe  
two languages.
- (3) Last year I アhave been to Europe with イone of my friends. Many ウEuropean [ ]  
cities have long history. I was very happy エto see many old buildings and  
places. I think he had オa very good time, too.
- (4) My father bought a book on science アfor me yesterday. I became much [ ]  
イinteresting in science ウafter reading the book my father gave me. That  
is エthe most interesting book オthat I have ever read.
- (5) I can't return the book アwhich I borrowed from the library last week. I [ ]  
haven't finished イto read it, because I ウhave had a lot of things エto do since  
last week. But I have to return it オby next week.

5 次の各組の中から、正しい英文をそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

- (1) ア The knife I cut the paper was very sharp. [ ]  
イ The car stopped in front of mine house.  
ウ Betty goes to her office by bus, doesn't she?  
エ Give me hot something to drink.
- (2) ア Nancy studied French as hard as she can. [ ]  
イ Bread with butter and jam are our usual breakfast.  
ウ Which is more useful, a dog and a cat?  
エ He is an old friend of my brother's.
- (3) ア You must not write a letter in a red ink. [ ]  
イ Do you know when will he come to see you?  
ウ You'd better to go home quickly.  
エ It will be a lot of fun to drive a car.
- (4) ア This is deeper than any other lake in Japan. [ ]  
イ I know him very well since I was a boy.  
ウ Has your dog returned home last night?  
エ You will arrive at the station for five minutes.
- (5) ア She can't play the guitar. He can't play it, too. [ ]  
イ She practices the piano not in the morning, but in the evening.  
ウ Guests at the hotel can swim not only in the swimming pool and also in the sea.  
エ You don't have to hurry up, or you will miss the bus.

6 次の日本語の意味になるように、あとの英文の誤りを抜き出し、正しい語(句)に直しなさい。 (土佐)

- (1) 「ネコは好きじゃないんですか。」「いや、好きです。」  
“Don’t you like cats?” “Yes, I don’t.” → .....
- (2) 暗くならないうちに帰宅しなければいけませんよ。  
You must come home before it doesn’t get dark. → .....
- (3) 彼は日曜の朝、テニスをするのを楽しんでいます。  
He enjoys to play tennis on Sunday morning. → .....
- (4) わたしたちはみな、雨のために家にいなければなりませんでした。  
We all had to stay home because the rain. → .....

7 次の文章は、中学3年の花子さんが英文交換日記の下書きを書いたものです。下線部の表現が正しければ○で、間違っていれば×で答えなさい。 (大阪女学院)

- (1) [       ]     (2) [       ]     (3) [       ]     (4) [       ]     (5) [       ]  
 (6) [       ]     (7) [       ]     (8) [       ]     (9) [       ]     (10) [       ]  
 (11) [       ]     (12) [       ]     (13) [       ]     (14) [       ]     (15) [       ]

Dear Momoko,

Last Friday my sister came home from Tokyo to spend her winter vacation with us in Osaka. She is (1) twenty-three year old and has lived in Tokyo (2) from last spring.

We (3) went to shopping together on Saturday. (4) During we were walking along Shinsaibashi-suji, I found a nice bag, and (5) my sister bought it for me. I was very happy because it was (6) the my first present she bought with her money. We bought some other things and then we went to see a movie.

(7) After we watched the movie, we went to McDonald’s and talked about it. Then I told her (8) how were our family doing these days. I was trying to study hard for the high school exam, but (9) Mother wanted me study much harder. When I watched television, sometimes Father got angry at me too....

She listened to me. I thought she was kind. I felt I was lucky to have (10) a such nice sister. I hoped that she would (11) say something good about me to my parents.

Then she (12) began talking about her life in Tokyo. Her job was not easy for her, but everyone was kind and helped her. She was enjoying her life. She didn’t feel lonely because (13) one of her friend was very kind to her. He was working in the same office. He was cool..., he was friendly..., he said she was beautiful..., he said he loved her....

And she said, “I want to ask Mom and Dad (14) meeting him one day. Study hard, Hanako. (15) Pass the exam, and Mom and Dad will be happy and I’ll be happy too. You must pass it for me.”

Oh! Please help me, Momoko!

Hanako

# 発展問題

**1** 次の文の下線部を正しい語(句)に直しなさい。

- (1) Each of the students have to go. \_\_\_\_\_
- (2) They started to the country. \_\_\_\_\_
- (3) Jane had her pictures take by her brother. \_\_\_\_\_
- (4) The news are bad today. \_\_\_\_\_
- (5) If it will rain tomorrow, we won't go on a picnic. \_\_\_\_\_
- (6) My wife knows Dr. Smith these ten years. \_\_\_\_\_
- (7) Show me that you have in your pocket. \_\_\_\_\_
- (8) He will surprise to hear his baby talking. \_\_\_\_\_
- (9) Helen was more carefully than her husband. \_\_\_\_\_
- (10) The language speaks in America is English. \_\_\_\_\_

**2** 次の文の下線部から誤りがあるものをそれぞれ1つずつ選び記号で答え、その部分を正しい語(句)に直しなさい。 〈洛星〉

- (1) 空港に着いたらすぐに電話をしてください。  
 ア Please call me イ as soon ウ as エ you will arrive at the airport.  
 [      ] \_\_\_\_\_
- (2) 君が何のことを言っているのかわかりません。  
 ア I don't know イ what ウ are you エ talking about.  
 [      ] \_\_\_\_\_
- (3) こんな興奮するような試合は見たことがありません。  
 ア This is イ the most exciting game ウ that エ I have never seen.  
 [      ] \_\_\_\_\_
- (4) わたしの時計はいつも遅れるので、修理しなければなりません。  
 ア As イ my watch is ウ always slow, エ it needs オ to repair.  
 [      ] \_\_\_\_\_
- (5) 父は大学生の時、ドイツに行ったことがあります。  
 ア My father イ went to ウ Germany エ when he was オ an university student.  
 [      ] \_\_\_\_\_

**3** 次の文の下線部から誤りがあるものをそれぞれ1つずつ選び記号で答え、その部分を正しい語に直しなさい。 〈大阪女学院〉

- (1) "Shall we イ go out?" " Yes, エ we shall." [      ] \_\_\_\_\_
- (2) I don't believe イ in ウ UFOs, エ too. [      ] \_\_\_\_\_
- (3) That singer イ has been ウ died エ for five years. [      ] \_\_\_\_\_
- (4) He runs イ very ウ faster than エ you. [      ] \_\_\_\_\_

4 次の文には、誤りがそれぞれ1か所ある。誤りの部分を抜き出し、正しい語(句)に直しなさい。

〈土佐塾〉

(1) He has been to Tokyo since he was ten years old.

..... → .....

(2) December is the twelve month of the year.

..... → .....

(3) I have lost my umbrella and I must buy it.

..... → .....

(4) He ran as fast as he can to catch the bus this morning.

..... → .....

(5) Mary and Kate were kind each other in those days.

..... → .....

(6) All the guests inviting to the party were surprised at the news.

..... → .....

(7) He is one of the students who has once been abroad.

..... → .....

5 次の中から、正しい英文を5つ選び、記号で答えなさい。

〈久留米大学附設〉

[       ] [       ] [       ] [       ] [       ]

ア I have only a few works to do, so I'll take a rest for a while.

イ I know you like reading very much. You seem to have at least three times books as many as mine.

ウ It is so small that you can't see it, no matter how you look at it carefully.

エ School year begins from April in Japan, while in most of the European countries school year begins from September.

オ Yesterday, I enjoyed to dance very much at the party, and I went to bed late at night.

カ The boy whose parents were killed in a car accident has been taken care of by his grandparents.

キ Hiroshi is one of my closest friends. We have been knowing each other for more than ten years.

ク I would like to know by tomorrow if you will attend the party.

ケ I'll be back by the time my father has come home.

コ Would you tell me how you call this flower in English?

サ Ten minute's walk will take you to the museum.

シ Please let me know as soon as you will arrive at the airport tomorrow.

ス There are a lot of places which I've long wanted to visit in Boston.

セ I wish I could stay here much longer, but I'm necessary to go home by nine o'clock.

ソ Sean is a person who I think is difficult to get along with.

6 次の文の下線部から誤りがあるものをそれぞれ1つずつ選び記号で答え、その部分を正しい語(句)に直しなさい。 (穎明館)

- (1) Every girl in this class were waiting excitedly for the coming of the new teacher. [ ]
- (2) Do you know the population of Hachioji City is about as many as that of Yokosuka City? [ ]
- (3) Nobody knows that three quarters of the building are now finished. [ ]
- (4) I wanted to know when I can have an answer from him, but he told me to wait until the next day. [ ]
- (5) She felt like crying, because she was laughed by most of the students in the class. [ ]

7 次の各組の文が両方とも正しければ○で、どちらかだけが間違っている場合はその記号で答えなさい。

- (1) ア He used to get up at six in the morning. [ ]  
イ He used to getting up at six in the morning.
- (2) ア I prefer grapes to tomatoes. [ ]  
イ I like grapes better than tomatoes.
- (3) ア You can't make him eat if he doesn't want to. [ ]  
イ This book is enough easy for a six-year-old child to read.
- (4) ア He has just finished breakfast. [ ]  
イ He has finished breakfast just now.
- (5) ア It was very hot in this room with all the windows closed. [ ]  
イ It was very hot in this room with all the windows were closed.

8 次の文の下線部から誤りがあるものをそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。 (久留米大学附設)

- (1) Although tea drinking is quite an old custom in the Far East, this custom first reached Europe for the first time during the 17th century. [ ]
- (2) When a spider catches an insect, it releases some poison into an insect with its fangs, but the poison of most spiders is harmless to man. [ ]
- (3) Bats are able to guide them by producing sound waves too high for us to hear. [ ]
- (4) I wish I could go to the U.S.A. in order to study medicine the other day. [ ]
- (5) He said the day before yesterday, "I met her on the street three days ago, but I did not see her since." [ ]

1 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- \*  (1) 君は毎日ここに来る必要はない。 〈成城学園〉  
 You ..... come here every day.
- (2) 彼はわたしたちのクラスで1番泳ぎがうまい。 〈大阪教育大学附属平野〉  
 He swims ..... other boy in our class.
- \*  (3) わたしたちは18世紀にできた橋を渡った。 〈成城学園〉  
 We crossed the bridge ..... in the 18th century.
- \*  (4) 君はクリスマスにもう手紙を書きましたか。 〈土佐〉  
 Have you ..... Chris yet?
- (5) どうして一郎さんはこんなに遅いのだろう。 〈早稲田実業〉  
 I'm just ..... Ichiro is so late.
- \*  (6) 英語の手紙の書き方を習いましょう。 〈大阪教育大学附属平野〉  
 Let's learn ..... a letter in English.
- (7) これは父にもらった本です。 〈大阪教育大学附属平野〉  
 This is the book ..... by my father.
- (8) トムが5年間ずっと、どこにいたのかわたしは知りません。 〈大阪教育大学附属平野〉  
 I don't know ..... for 5 years.
- \*  (9) 手はいつも清潔にしておかなければなりません。 〈東京工業大学附属工業〉  
 You must always ..... your hands .....
- (10) 彼女はもう学校へ行ける年です。 〈東京工業大学附属工業〉  
 She is ..... to go to school.
- \*  (11) 向こうで走っている少年と犬を知っています。 〈山手学院〉  
 I know the boy and the dog ..... are running over there.
- \*  (12) あなたの探している本が見つかるといいですね。 〈東京工業大学附属工業〉  
 I hope you can find the book you are .....
- \*  (13) メアリーはクラシック音楽に興味があります。 〈土佐〉  
 Mary ..... classical music.
- (14) ナンシーはお母さんに似ています。 〈土佐〉  
 Nancy ..... her mother.
- (15) ジェーンはピアノが得意です。 〈土佐〉  
 Jane ..... playing the piano.
- (16) 何か冷たいものでもどうですか。 〈大阪教育大学附属平野〉  
 ..... to drink?
- ④  (17) どうしてそう思ったのですか。  
 What ..... you ..... so?

2 次の日本文に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- \*  (1) ポールはけさ、学校に遅れました。 (土佐)  
Paul ..... school this morning.
- \*  (2) 君たちは他人に親切にしなければなりません。 (土佐)  
You must ..... others.
- (3) ボブは家に帰る途中で、おじさんを訪ねました。 (土佐)  
Bob visited his uncle .....
- (4) あなたの車のどこが悪いのですか。 (大阪教育大学附属平野)  
..... with your car?
- (5) ホテルまで乗せていってくれませんか。 (青山学院)  
Will you ..... me a ride to my hotel?
- (6) 郵便局はこの道を下ったところにあります。すぐわかりますよ。 (青山学院)  
The post office is down the street. You cannot ..... it.
- \*  (7) ご両親によろしく。 (青山学院)  
Please be sure to ..... hello to your parents.
- (8) 新しい先生の田中先生は、どんな先生ですか。 (青山学院)  
What's Mr. Tanaka, our new teacher, .....
- \*  (9) ステーキの焼き加減はどういたしましょうか。 (山手学院)  
..... would you like your steak?
- (10) 彼は医者から1日に2回その薬を飲むように言われました。 (慶應義塾)  
He was told by the doctor ..... the medicine twice a day.
- (11) わたしは急いでいたのでバスを乗り間違えてしまいました。 (早稲田実業)  
I ..... the wrong bus because I was ..... a hurry.
- (12) 失礼ですが、お席が違っているようです。 (東京工業大学附属工業)  
Excuse me, but I think you're in the .....
- \*  (13) A: 宿題終わってないんでしょう。 (青山学院)  
B: うん、きょう1日中、ひどい風邪だったんだ。  
A: Haven't you done your homework?  
B: ....., I've had a bad cold today.
- \*  (14) A: ここで少し待ちましょう。 (青山学院)  
B: そうしましょう。  
A: Let's wait here for a while.  
B: Yes, ..... do.
- \*  (15) A: ぼくはコンサートに行かなかったんだ。 (山手学院)  
B: わたしもよ。  
A: I didn't go to the concert.  
B: I didn't, .....

3 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) あなたがたは、上手な泳ぎ方を学ばなければなりません。 (城北)  
You have .....
- \*  (2) あなたがたは英語を一生懸命勉強することが大切です。 (城北)  
.....  
study English hard.
- \*  (3) わたしが去年最も好きだった歌は、若い人達に人気があった。 (城北)  
The song ..... was  
popular with young people.
- (4) わたしはやっとその本を読み終えた。 (城北)  
I have .....
- (5) 駅へ行く道を教えてくれてありがとう。 (大阪教育大学附属平野)  
Thank you ..... to  
the station.
- \*  (6) 彼はきのうさよならも言わずにアメリカへ発った。 (お茶の水女子大学附属)  
Yesterday he ..... America .....
- (7) 彼は仕事から帰る途中、いつものように公園でひと休みした。 (お茶の水女子大学附属)  
..... work, he  
..... in the park .....
- (8) そこに着くとすぐに母に手紙を書いた。 (城北)  
....., I  
wrote to my mother.
- \*  (9) 彼は駅にとても早く着いたので10分以上列車を待たなければならなかった。 (大阪教育大学附属平野)  
He arrived at the station .....  
..... to wait for the train more than ten minutes.
- \*  (10) 初心者に英語を教えるのは難しいと思いました。 (大阪女学院)  
I thought ..... to .....  
..... to the beginner.
- (11) きこの午後、学校から帰る途中で、夕立にあいました。 (桐蔭学園)  
..... I ..... in a shower .....  
..... school.
- (12) わたしたちは山の頂上までずっと歩き続けたので、これ以上動けなかった。 (お茶の水女子大学附属)  
We could ..... move ..... as we continued to walk  
..... the top of the mountain.
- (13) 明後日、長いこと会っていない旧友をたずねるつもりです。 (桐蔭学園)  
The day ..... I'll ..... an old friend of  
mine ..... for a long  
time.

4 次の日本語に合う英文になるように、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

- (1) コーヒーがほしい方は他にいらっしゃいませんか。 (広島大学附属)  
..... would like some coffee?
- (2) ぼくは疲れた。運転をかわってくれよ。 (広島大学附属)  
I'm tired. It's ..... to drive.
- (3) ぼくの腕時計はどこかな。わからないよ。 (広島大学附属)  
Where is my watch? I have .....
- (4) 歯の痛みはしばらく取れないと思います。 (開成)  
I'm ..... your toothache will ..... for some time.
- (5) UFO とは未確認飛行物体のことです。 (開成)  
UFO ..... for "unidentified ..... object".
- (6) 彼は言葉は少ないが、約束は必ず守る人だから、頼りになる。 (開成)  
He is a ..... of ..... words, but he always keeps his .....  
You can ..... upon him.
- (7) 自分の信じることを主張する勇気をもつべきだと、よく父はわたしに言ったものだ。 (開成)  
My father ..... to ..... me that we ..... to have the  
..... to express our beliefs.
- (8) 「きょうできることをあしたに延ばすな。」とよく言われますが、それができる人はそれほど多くありません。 (立教新座)  
People often say, "Don't put off .....  
.....," but not .....  
..... this advice.
- (9) A: すみませんが、市役所へはこの道を行けばいいのでしょうか。 (立教新座)  
B: そうですよ。歩いて約10分です。  
A: Excuse me, but .....  
..... the city hall?  
B: That's right. It is .....
- (10) A: ほんの目と鼻の先なのによく学校に遅刻するね。 (ラ・サール)  
B: テレビゲームにはまっちゃってね、あんまり寝てないんだ。だから、授業中も眠たいし…。そこでだ、このノートいつまで貸してもらえる?  
A: 月曜に返してくれればいいよ。  
A: You're ....., though you  
.....  
B: I've been playing a lot of video games, and I'm not sleeping well. So .....  
..... in class .... Now, how .....  
..... your notebook?  
A: .....

**1** 次の日本語を指定された語数で英語に直しなさい。

〈京華〉

\*  (1) 君はこの本を読んだほうがいい。〔6語で〕

.....

(2) わたしは彼女にそこへ行くように言いました。〔6語で〕

.....

(3) わたしは彼はあなたより年上だと思います。〔8語で〕

.....

\*  (4) 英語はカナダで話されています。〔5語で〕

.....

\*  (5) 彼はどのくらいの間あなたを知っているのですか。〔6語で〕

.....

**2** 次の日本語を英語に直しなさい。

〈土佐塾〉

(1) 君はいつから彼と友達ですか。

.....

\*  (2) あの雲は何に見えますか。

.....

\*  (3) あした天気がよかったら、川へ泳ぎに行こうよ。

.....

**3** 次の日本語を英語に直しなさい。

〈関西学院〉

(1) 先月、飛行機でオーストラリアに行きました。 (2) 約8時間かかりました。 (3) 機長が話していた英語は非常に速かったので、ほとんどわかりませんでした。 (4) もっと英語を熱心に勉強しようと思いました。

(1) .....

(2) .....

(3) .....

(4) .....

\* **4** 次の日本語を英語に直しなさい。

〈桐朋〉

(1) きょう山田先生から出された宿題は、1時間以上かかるだろう。 (2) 今晚見たいテレビがあるから、家に帰ったらすぐに始めなければ。

(1) .....

(2) .....

5 次の日本語を英語に直しなさい。

- (1) その仕事をするのに彼は1週間かかった。[Itで始めて] 〈同志社〉  
-----
- (2) 母はあの新しい店に買い物に出かけたばかりです。[Myで始めて] 〈同志社〉  
-----
- \*  (3) その机の上の本は全部彼女のものです。[Allで始めて] 〈同志社〉  
-----
- \*  (4) 7時50分に家を出なさい。そうすればその電車に間に合うでしょう。 〈穎明館〉  
-----
- (5) あまりに疲れていたので、わたしは歩いて家に帰ることができなかった。 〈穎明館〉  
-----
- \*  (6) 雨が降り出さないうちに家に帰りましょう。 〈穎明館〉  
-----
- (7) どうしてあの少年は犬を怖がるのだろう。[Iで始めて] 〈穎明館〉  
-----
- (8) あなたの言うことがみんなに聞こえるように、もっと大きな声で話しなさい。 〈穎明館〉  
-----
- \*  (9) あなたの町には中学校がいくつあるか知っていますか。 〈穎明館〉  
-----
- \*  (10) 昨夜わたしがトムに電話をしたとき、彼は宿題をしているところでした。 〈青雲〉  
-----
- (11) 君は彼がいつヨーロッパから帰国するつもりでいるか知っていますか。 〈青雲〉  
-----
- (12) もし君が一生懸命練習すれば、2、3日で泳げるようになるでしょう。 〈青雲〉  
-----
- \*  (13) 彼女はきのう公園で、彼と何のことを話したのですか。 〈青雲〉  
-----
- \*  (14) 多くの母親が息子にもっと勉強して欲しいと思っています。 〈甲陽学院〉  
-----
- (15) 各国はお互いを理解するために最善を尽くすべきです。 〈甲陽学院〉  
-----
- (16) わたしは外国のことをもっと知るために、留学することを決意した。 〈清風南海〉  
-----

6 次の対話文を英語に直しなさい。

\*  (1) A : You went to the bank again today, didn't you? Why? 〈日本大学第二〉  
B : また、息子がわたしにお金を少し送ってくれて頼んできたからなのよ。

(2) A : What's the matter with you, Susan? 〈慶應義塾〉  
B : おととい学校から家に帰る途中で、財布をなくしてしまったの。

(3) A : Mary is all right? 〈慶應義塾〉  
B : Thank you. She is fine. わたしの娘は生まれてから病気で寝たことはありません。

\*  (4) A : Who is he? 〈慶應義塾〉  
B : あの眼鏡をかけたひとは、この間どこかで会った覚えがある。

(5) A : ① 父はここ数年病気で寝ています。病状は悪化しています。 〈愛光〉  
B : ② それはいけませんね。早いご回復をお祈りします。

①

②

\*  (6) A : ① わたしたちは気の毒な老人たちを援助するために何をすべきでしょうか。 〈立命館〉  
B : ② おばあちゃんに聞いてごらん下さい。そうすれば、何をすべきか教えてくれますよ。

①

②

(7) A : ① 君は彼女にお礼の手紙を書かなかったのですか。 〈青雲〉  
B : ② いいえ、書きました。

①

②

\*  (8) A : ① 先週の水曜日に図書館で会ったアメリカ人の先生に会いに行こうか。 〈大阪教育大学附属平野〉  
B : ② うん、行こう。彼がどこに住んでいるかは、服部龍太郎君が知っているよね。

①

②

# 発展問題

1 次の日本語を英語に直しなさい。

〈穎明館〉

(1) アメリカで1番人気のあるスポーツは野球ではないというのは本当ですか。

.....  
.....

\* (2) きょうの新聞によると、今年の春は雨がが多いそうです。

.....  
.....

(3) わたしが楽しみにしているパーティーには多くの有名人が来るでしょう。

.....  
.....

2 次の日本語を英語に直しなさい。

〈大阪星光学院〉

(1) 1万円貸してくれませんか。お金が少し足りないのです。

.....  
.....

\* (2) くれぐれもお体に気をつけてください。向こうに着いたら新しい住所と電話番号を知らせてください。

.....  
.....

⑦ (3) 彼は実際の年齢よりも若く見える。若い人たちがするいろんなスポーツをずっとしてきたからでしょう。

.....  
.....

3 次の下線部の日本語を英語に直しなさい。

\* (1) きょうは外出できません。子供たちが帰ってこないうちにやっしまわなければならない仕事がたくさんあるのです。

〈東京学芸大学附属〉

.....  
.....

(2) We went to Disneyland by bus. 正面入口で、青と黄色の服を着たかわいい女の子に会った。

〈慶應義塾〉

.....  
.....

\* (3) Tom was born on October 10. ぼくは誕生日のプレゼントに、彼の大好きなビデオテープをあげることに決めた。

〈慶應義塾〉

.....  
.....

※ 4 次の日本語を英語に直しなさい。

〈学習院〉

(1) わたしはきのうその本を図書館から借りて、きょうの午後それを読み終わりました。(2) それは先週読んだものよりはるかにおもしろいものでした。

(1) \_\_\_\_\_

(2) \_\_\_\_\_

5 次の日本語を英語に直しなさい。

※  (1) これが、わたしがその男について知っているすべてです。 〈土佐塾〉

※  (2) 彼は世界でも指折りのサッカー選手だと思います。 〈穎明館〉

(3) その旅は、人々や文化を知る機会を与えてくれるでしょう。 〈城北〉

※  (4) これらの質問は難しすぎて、ぼくには解けなかった。〔接続詞 that を用いて〕 〈城北〉

(5) あの犬はこれからメアリーに世話されるのでしょうか。〔受動態を用いて〕 〈城北〉

(6) このあたりで少し買い物をしたいのです。どこに駐車したらよいか教えていただけませんか。 〈ラ・サール〉

※  (7) その塔があそこに見える建物は、わたしたちの町で最も有名な教会です。 〈ラ・サール〉

※  (8) 富士山に20年間毎年登っている老人のことを聞いたことがありますか。 〈ラ・サール〉

(9) エレベーターが故障で、わたしたちは9階まで歩いて上がらなければなりません。 〈甲陽学院〉

(10) 多くの人が元日に日記をつけ始めるが、ほとんどの人が数日たてばやめてしまう。 〈久留米大学附設〉

(11) わたしたちの学校は町の中心にあり、最寄りの駅から歩いて5分以内で行けます。 〈大阪星光学院〉

6 次の下線部の日本語を英語に直しなさい。

〈桐朋〉

(1) わたしの友人の青木君からもう10年間なんの便りもありません。 (2) どこにいるのやら、どんな仕事をしているのやら、わたしはぜんぜん知りません。

(3) 去る2月、わたしは長年外国で暮らした後、帰国した。 日本はわたしのなつかしい祖国ではあるけれど、

(4) 見るものすべてがわたしには新鮮に見える。

- (1) .....
- (2) .....
- (3) .....
- (4) .....

\* 7 次の下線部の日本語を英語に直しなさい。

〈海城〉

For many centuries, (1) 世界中の人々はバレンタインデー (Saint Valentine's Day) に贈り物やカードをお互いに交換してきました。 Valentine cards became popular in the 1750s. The first Valentine cards were made by hand. People wrote their own words on the cards, usually a kind of funny message. (2) 1850年ごろに機械製のカードの方がより人気が出ました。

- (1) .....
- (2) .....

\* 8 次の日本語を英語に直しなさい。

〈ラ・サール〉

(元旦。家族がそれぞれ新しい一年の抱負について話し合っている)

Ichiro : (1) ぼくは夏目漱石が書いた小説に興味があるから、できるだけたくさん読みたいね。それからDVDを買って映画も見たい。愛子はどうしたい？

Aiko : わたしはフランス語を一生懸命勉強したいな。(2) 毎晩寝る前にフランス語で日記をつけるつもりよ。

Father : では(3) 良い年になるといいな。

- (1) .....
- (2) .....
- (3) .....

1 次の C と D の関係が、A と B の関係と同じになるように、D に適する語を書きなさい。

	A	B	C	D	
* <input type="checkbox"/> (1)	high	low	safe	.....	
* <input type="checkbox"/> (2)	ate	eight	threw	.....	
* <input type="checkbox"/> (3)	cloud	cloudy	death	.....	
<input type="checkbox"/> (4)	good	better	ill	.....	〈成城学園〉
* <input type="checkbox"/> (5)	open	close	remember	.....	〈成城学園〉
* <input type="checkbox"/> (6)	come	go	bring	.....	〈大阪星光学院〉
<input type="checkbox"/> (7)	blew	blue	one	.....	〈大阪星光学院〉
<input type="checkbox"/> (8)	begin	beginning	lie	.....	〈大阪星光学院〉
<input type="checkbox"/> (9)	dark	darkness	deep	.....	〈大阪星光学院〉
<input type="checkbox"/> (10)	30 minutes	half	15 minutes	.....	

2 次の説明が表す単語を英語で答えなさい。

- \*  (1) ..... : the color like that of butter, gold or middle part of an egg 〈大妻中野〉
- \*  (2) ..... : a book used for collecting photos 〈大妻中野〉
- \*  (3) ..... : the machine which we use when we take pictures 〈立命館〉
- (4) ..... : a person who grows rice and vegetables and keeps animals 〈立命館〉
- \*  (5) ..... : a brother of our father or mother 〈立命館〉
- (6) ..... : a paper thing. We usually put a letter in it. 〈青山学院〉
- (7) ..... : a thing made of glass. We see ourselves with it. 〈青山学院〉
- \*  (8) ..... : a daughter of one's brother or sister 〈大妻中野〉
- (9) ..... : a leader of a group of people 〈立命館〉
- (10) ..... : the biggest animal in the sea 〈立命館〉
- (11) ..... : a thing which covers the hand with separate parts for the thumb and each finger 〈大妻中野〉
- (12) ..... : the set of letters used in writing words. The English one has 26 of them. 〈青山学院〉
- \*  (13) ..... : a person in a hospital who works with doctors and helps sick people. 〈青山学院〉
- \*  (14) ..... : a building. Interesting things are kept in this building and shown to people. 〈青山学院〉
- (15) ..... : a book which has a page for each day of the year. On it you write down the things you did on the day. 〈青山学院〉
- (16) ..... : a large sports ground with seats all around it. We go there to see baseball games. 〈青山学院〉

3 次の文の意味が通るように、          に適する語を書きなさい。ただし、( )内に文字が示されている場合は、その文字で始まる単語で答えなさい。

- \*  (1) A                    is a child of one's uncle or aunt. ( c )
- \*  (2) A                    is often a great help when you have some words you don't understand. ( d )
- \*  (3) September is the                    month of the year. ( n )
- \*  (4)                    is the first meal of the day. ( B ) 〈成城学園〉
- \*  (5) The month which comes between January and March is                   . 〈高知学芸〉
- (6) It was very                   . We couldn't see our hands before our faces. 〈広島大学附属〉
- \*  (7) A room used for cooking is a                   . 〈成城学園〉
- (8) The language you first learned to speak is called your mother                   . ( t ) 〈修道〉
- (9) A                    is a small group of houses and shops in the country and is usually smaller than a town. 〈成城学園〉
- \*  (10) John never writes a                   . We haven't heard from him since he left. 〈広島大学附属〉
- (11) I don't think you've met Mr. Green before. I'll                    you to him. 〈広島大学附属〉
- (12) An                    is a thing which carries people up and down in the building. 〈成城学園〉
- \*  (13) A : Do you like summer the best? 〈修道〉  
B : No, I don't. My                    season is spring. ( f )
- (14) The number of people in this town has                    in the last 10 years. There were 20,000 people ten years ago, but now there are 30,000. ( i ) 〈修道〉
- \*  (15) You don't                    to go to school today, because it is Sunday. 〈高知学芸〉
- (16) I am very glad to hear                    your success. 〈久留米大学附設〉
- (17) What is the city famous                    ? 〈高知学芸〉
- \*  (18) I lost my watch. I must buy                   . 〈関西学院〉
- (19) Mt. Fuji is about four                    as high as Mt. Rokko. 〈関西学院〉
- (20) Milk is made                    cheese and butter. 〈関西学院〉
- (21) Don't stand on that chair. It's not strong                   . 〈広島大学附属〉
- (22) Health is more precious than                    else. 〈久留米大学附設〉
- (23) I don't know                    of the two boys. I've never seen one of them. 〈久留米大学附設〉
- \*  (24) A : How                    do you call her on the phone? 〈関西学院〉  
B : I call her every day.
- \*  (25) A : How                    did you drive? 〈修道〉  
B : I drove at 70 kilometers an hour.
- (26) A : I know what to do in such a case. 〈久留米大学附設〉  
B : So                    I.

4 次の説明が表す単語を英語で答えなさい。ただし、(1)と(2)は( )内に示されている文字で始まる単語で、(3)~(5)は( )内に示されている文字で終わる単語で答えなさい。

- (1) \_\_\_\_\_ : a small book that tells which country you are from when you are going into a foreign country ( p ) 〈成城学園〉
- \*  (2) \_\_\_\_\_ : a person who gives his or her help without getting anything ( v ) 〈成城学園〉
- \*  (3) \_\_\_\_\_ : a type of dress worn by all members of a group, such as the police, a school, a sports club, etc. ( m ) 〈海城〉
- (4) \_\_\_\_\_ : someone who lives near another ( r ) 〈海城〉
- (5) \_\_\_\_\_ : a thing carried in the hand for protecting a person usually from rain or sun ( a )

5 次の下線部と同じ意味を表すものをあとからそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。 〈青山学院〉

- \*  (1) It was about ten o'clock at night. They were tired, but they went on working. [ ]  
 ア started      イ enjoyed      ウ continued      エ tried
- \*  (2) The ship got to the port after traveling across the sea for many days. [ ]  
 ア found      イ caught      ウ attacked      エ reached
- (3) From time to time they went to the library together to study. [ ]  
 ア sometimes      イ later      ウ finally      エ always
- (4) Goodbye. I'll see you before long. [ ]  
 ア tonight      イ again      ウ then      エ soon
- (5) Taro lived alone. One day he made stew, but it was too much. So Taro ate nothing but stew for three days. [ ]  
 ア no      イ a lot of      ウ only      エ terrible

6 次の文が、それぞれの単語の意味の説明になるように、( )に入る語をあとから1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。 〈早稲田実業〉

(1) [ ]     (2) [ ]     (3) [ ]     (4) [ ]     (5) [ ]

- \*  (1) save = to ( ) money in a bank to use it later
- \*  (2) stay = to live in a place for a short time as a visitor, or just ( ) there
- (3) agree = to have or ( ) the same opinion about something as someone else
- (4) borrow = to use a thing or things that ( ) to someone else and that you must give back to them later
- (5) exchange = to give someone something and ( ) the same kind of thing from them at the same time

ア lend	イ receive	ウ express	エ move
オ join	カ keep	キ belong	ク sleep

7 次の各組の( )には同じつづりの単語が入ります。その語を答えなさい。

- (1) ..... (a) Do you understand so ( )? <愛光>  
(b) How ( ) is it from here to the airport?
- \*  (2) ..... (a) Are the trains running ( ) time today? <愛光>  
(b) She tried ( ) her new party dress.
- (3) ..... (a) My dream of opening a little restaurant has ( ) true. <愛光>  
(b) Where did you ( ) across the famous singer?
- \*  (4) ..... (a) Please ( ) hello to your family for me. <愛光>  
(b) What did you ( ) to yourself when you heard the news?
- \*  (5) ..... (a) The ( ) of the trees are turning yellow. <東海>  
(b) She ( ) London for Tokyo tomorrow.  
(c) He often ( ) his umbrella on the train.
- \*  (6) ..... (a) Read the ( ) page of the book. <東海>  
(b) At ( ) he found the key under the desk.  
(c) How long will this hot weather ( )?
- (7) ..... (a) The story will ( ) out to be true. <甲陽学院>  
(b) We must ( ) to the left and drive north.
- \*  (8) ..... (a) What do you ( ) this fish in Japanese? <甲陽学院>  
(b) Will you please ( ) me up as soon as you get there?
- (9) ..... (a) The two rivers ( ) into the Japan Sea. <甲陽学院>  
(b) My uncle wants to ( ) a supermarket in the future.
- \*  (10) ..... (a) Let's ( ) a campfire near the lake. <甲陽学院>  
(b) Can you ( ) yourself understood in English?
- (11) ..... (a) He stopped ( ) in front of the gate. <灘>  
(b) Are you all ( ) today?  
(c) Keep to the ( ).
- (12) ..... (a) The ground is ( ) covered with snow. <灘>  
(b) I was tired, but I ( ) walked on.  
(c) You have only to sit ( ) on the chair.
- \*  (13) ..... (a) Keep my words in ( ). <灘>  
(b) Do you ( ) if I open the window?  
(c) He did not change his ( ).
- (14) ..... (a) There is a hospital at the ( ) of the street. <灘>  
(b) He will ( ) his concert with our favorite song.  
(c) Money is an ( ) in itself for the politician.
- (15) ..... (a) What ( ) of the US do you come from? <灘>  
(b) She played an important ( ) in our business.  
(c) He had to ( ) with the jewels at last.

8 次の⑥の文の \_\_\_\_\_ には、①の文の下線部の単語と発音が同じでつづりの異なる語が入ります。その語を答えなさい。  
〈成城学園〉

- \*  (1) ① My grandmother lives alone here in Tokyo.  
② I cannot \_\_\_\_\_ you because of the noise.
- (2) ① Could you give me a piece of paper?  
② People all over the world hope for world \_\_\_\_\_ .
- \*  (3) ① The sun rises in the east and sets in the west.  
② We have a \_\_\_\_\_ and two daughters.

9 次の文の \_\_\_\_\_ には、同じ文中で用いられている単語と発音が同じでつづりの異なる語が入ります。その語を答えなさい。  
〈大阪星光学院〉

- \*  (1) One of my classmates \_\_\_\_\_ first prize in the speech contest last Friday.
- (2) The new teacher \_\_\_\_\_ all her pupils to read their books aloud.
- ☑  (3) A guest present at the party \_\_\_\_\_ what was in the red box.
- ☑  (4) While we ① \_\_\_\_\_ the boat down the river, a small boy ② \_\_\_\_\_ a bicycle on the road along the river.

10 次の各組の文の \_\_\_\_\_ には、それぞれ発音が同じでつづりの異なる語が入ります。その語を答えなさい。ただし、( )内に文字が示されている場合は、その文字で始まる単語で答えなさい。

- \*  (1)  ① The wind \_\_\_\_\_ so hard that I could not walk. ( b ) 〈甲陽学院〉  
 ② The girl in a \_\_\_\_\_ dress is my sister. ( b )
- (2)  ① He bought a \_\_\_\_\_ of glasses. ( p ) 〈甲陽学院〉  
 ② I enjoyed eating a delicious \_\_\_\_\_. ( p )
- (3)  ① Our yacht has a red \_\_\_\_\_. ( s ) 〈甲陽学院〉  
 ② This toy is not for \_\_\_\_\_. ( s )
- \*  (4)  ① Please \_\_\_\_\_ for me till three. ( w ) 〈甲陽学院〉  
 ② He lost two kilograms in \_\_\_\_\_ last month. ( w )
- \*  (5)  ① \_\_\_\_\_ your name and address here, please. 〈関西学院〉  
 ② It isn't \_\_\_\_\_ to steal.
- \*  (6)  ① Someone \_\_\_\_\_ a stone at me. 〈関西学院〉  
 ② The boy got into the house \_\_\_\_\_ the window.
- (7)  ① In the baseball game we \_\_\_\_\_ 7 points to 3. 〈青雲〉  
 ② The fish I missed yesterday was a very big \_\_\_\_\_ .
- (8)  ① The children have \_\_\_\_\_ many interesting things at the show. 〈青雲〉  
 ② The snow \_\_\_\_\_ from the window was quite beautiful.
- (9)  ① Do you like your coffee \_\_\_\_\_ or strong? 〈青雲〉  
 ② She teaches English once a \_\_\_\_\_ .

# 語彙に関するリスト

## ■反対語

- absent — present
- dead — alive
- deep — shallow
- different — same
- early — late
- easy — difficult
- expensive — cheap
- far — near
- fast — slow
- first — last
- free — busy
- good — bad
- hard — soft
- high — low
- full — empty
- large — small
- light — heavy
- narrow — wide
- noisy — quiet
- quickly — slowly
- rich — poor
- right — wrong
- safe — dangerous
- short — long
- thick — thin
- weak — strong

## ■対になる語

- brother — sister
- cow — ox
- east — west
- gentleman — lady
- king — queen
- man — woman
- north — south
- prince — princess
- question — answer

remember — forget

son — daughter

uncle — aunt

wife — husband

## ■形容詞と名詞

- beautiful — beauty
- cloudy — cloud
- dead — death
- deep — depth
- different — difference
- difficult — difficulty
- French — France
- friendly — friend
- funny — fun
- happy — happiness
- high — height
- hot — heat
- ill — illness
- kind — kindness
- long — length
- noisy — noise
- safe — safety
- sunny — sun
- true — truth
- wise — wisdom
- young — youth

## ■動詞と名詞

- advise — advice
- believe — belief
- discover — discovery
- grow — growth
- invent — invention
- know — knowledge
- live — life
- marry — marriage
- please — pleasure

## ■人を表す語

- art — artist
- lie — liar
- music — musician
- piano — pianist
- paint — painter
- run — runner
- sail — sailor
- science — scientist
- swim — swimmer
- visit — visitor

## ■同音異義語

- ate — eight
- blew — blue
- buy — by
- dear — deer
- hear — here
- hair — hare
- know — no
- knew — new
- meat — meet
- pair — pear
- passed — past
- peace — piece
- read — red
- right — write
- road — rode, rowed
- sea — see
- scene — seen
- son — sun
- threw — through
- there — their
- way — weigh
- wait — weight
- weak — week
- won — one
- would — wood





11 次の左の語と、下線部の発音が同じものをそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。 〈青雲〉

- \*  (1) laugh (ア brought イ thought ウ through エ enough) [ ]  
\*  (2) most (ア orange イ only ウ women エ once) [ ]  
 (3) free (ア written イ busy ウ machine エ pretty) [ ]  
 (4) wanted (ア arrived イ surprised ウ started エ stayed) [ ]  
\*  (5) food (ア cook イ noon ウ look エ stood) [ ]

12 次の左の語と、下線部の発音が同じものをそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。 〈桐蔭学園〉

- (1) holiday (ア alone イ become ウ problem エ autumn) [ ]  
\*  (2) machine (ア season イ shadow ウ stomach エ speech) [ ]  
 (3) already (ア breakfast イ least ウ great エ idea) [ ]  
\*  (4) mouth (ア cousin イ shoulder ウ soup エ around) [ ]

13 次の左の語と、下線部の発音が異なるものをそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。 〈東海〉

- \*  (1) cow (ア flower イ now ウ grow エ tower) [ ]  
 (2) dream (ア mean イ leave ウ tear エ speak) [ ]  
\*  (3) book (ア food イ foot ウ wood エ shook) [ ]  
 (4) boat (ア broad イ road ウ coal エ goal) [ ]  
 (5) only (ア both イ doll ウ cold エ post) [ ]

14 次の左の語と、下線部の発音が同じ場合は○、異なる場合は×で答えなさい。 〈大阪教育大学附属天王寺〉

- \*  (1) already (① break ② easy ③ breakfast)  
□① [ ] □② [ ] □③ [ ]  
 (2) cloud (① country ② shout ③ through)  
□① [ ] □② [ ] □③ [ ]  
\*  (3) famous (① said ② station ③ air)  
□① [ ] □② [ ] □③ [ ]  
 (4) finished (① wanted ② watched ③ looked)  
□① [ ] □② [ ] □③ [ ]

15 次の各組の中から、アクセントがある母音の発音が、他の3語と異なるものをそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。 〈久留米大学附設〉

- \*  (1) (ア country イ collar ウ London エ southern) [ ]  
 (2) (ア break イ race ウ great エ sweat) [ ]  
 (3) (ア air イ bear ウ fear エ hare) [ ]  
\*  (4) (ア coat イ cost ウ most エ sew) [ ]  
 (5) (ア bird イ heart ウ hurt エ pearl) [ ]

16 次の各組の中から、アクセントがある母音の発音が、左の語の下線部と異なるものをそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

- \*  (1) busy (ア symbol イ building ウ women エ public) [ ]
- \*  (2) peace (ア heaven イ even ウ piece エ speech) [ ]
- (3) southern (ア some イ brother ウ money エ power) [ ]
- (4) raise (ア lady イ main ウ bread エ radio) [ ]

17 次の各組の単語のアクセントがある母音の発音が、4つとも同じ場合はア、3つ同じ場合はイ、2つ同じ場合はウで、すべて異なる場合はエで答えなさい。 (大阪教育大学附属平野)

- (1) ( together November vegetable seventeen) [ ]
- \*  (2) ( between dictionary interesting invite) [ ]
- \*  (3) ( April October mountain country) [ ]
- \*  (4) ( thousand found proud without) [ ]
- (5) ( wear dear chair there) [ ]

18 次の各組の中から、単語の発音が同じものを4つ選び、記号で答えなさい。 (甲陽学院)

[ ] [ ] [ ] [ ]

- ア ( batter butter ) イ ( coat court ) ウ ( dear deer )
- エ ( farm firm ) オ ( flour flower ) カ ( heart hurt )
- キ ( honor owner ) ク ( hole whole ) ケ ( horse hose )
- コ ( loose lose ) サ ( pool pull ) シ ( pour power )
- ス ( seat sheet ) セ ( tail tale )

19 次の文の下線部の動詞の過去分詞と同じ母音の発音を含む単語をそれぞれ2つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

(慶應義塾志木)

- (1) I have to write my report by tomorrow. [ ] [ ]
- ア find イ pretty ウ meal エ reach オ team カ women
- (2) Will you speak more slowly? [ ] [ ]
- ア salt イ abroad ウ warm エ old オ home カ horse
- \*  (3) What does this word mean? [ ] [ ]
- ア says イ weak ウ peace エ meat オ heat カ pleasant
- (4) Can I catch the 8 o'clock train? [ ] [ ]
- ア post イ door ウ smoke エ both オ short カ over
- \*  (5) Do you think fish can hear? [ ] [ ]
- ア learn イ park ウ church エ dark オ heart カ March

1 次の(1), (2)の文章を読んで, それぞれあとの問いに答えなさい。 (修道)

(1) It was a dark and \*stormy night in the \*harbor. A \*captain was returning to his ship. Then suddenly he \*slipped on the \*gangplank and fell into the water. One of the men saw this and jumped into the water to help him. It was difficult to save him on such a stormy night. But the man was a good swimmer and was able to bring the captain up to the ship.

5

“Thank you very much,” said the captain. “Tomorrow I will thank you before all the men of the ship.”

“Please don’t do that, sir,” said the man. “If they know that I have saved you, they will surely kill me.”

語句

stormy 嵐の harbor 港 captain 船長 slip 滑る gangplank 船のタラップ

(問) 下線部からどんなことがわかりますか。20字以内の日本語で答えなさい。


(2) There was a meeting with two speakers and many people.

At first the speaker was very interesting. But while time went on, he became \*boring. First a man got up from his seat and left the room. Then another \*disappeared, and so on. But the speaker went on his speech.

5

At last when he ended, there was only one man sitting in the large room. The speaker got down from the \*platform and spoke to the man: “Thank you very much for hearing me out when all the others left the room.” “Oh, you’re welcome,” answered the man. “I cannot leave like others, because I am the next speaker.”

語句

boring 退屈させるような disappear 姿を消す platform 演壇

(問) 下線部に込められたthe manの本心を15字以内の日本語で答えなさい。

--	--	--	--	--	--	--	--	--	--	--	--	--	--	--	--	--	--	--	--

2 次の文章を読んで、あとの問いに答えなさい。

〈東海〉

Mr. Knott was a teacher who taught in a big school in London. He lived a long way from the school, so he was usually quite tired when he got home. At nine o'clock one evening, when he was in bed, the telephone rang in the hall of his small house, so he went \*downstairs, picked up the telephone and said, "This is Whitebridge 3165. Who's speaking, please?"

5

"Watt," a man answered.

"What's your name, please?" said Mr. Knott.

① "Watt's my name," was the answer.

"Yes, I asked you that. What's your name?" Mr. Knott said again.

"I told you. Watt's my name," said the other man. "Are you Jack Smith?"

10

"No, I'm Knott," answered Mr. Knott.

"Will you give me your name, please?" said Mr. Watt.

② "Will Knott," answered Mr. Knott.

Both Mr. Watt and Mr. Knott put their telephones down angrily and thought, "That was a \*rude, stupid man!"

15

語句

downstairs 階下へ    rude 無礼な

(1) 下線部①を聞き手はどのように聞き取ったと考えられますか。その英文を書きなさい。

.....

(2) 下線部②を聞き手はどのような意味だと考えたのですか。日本語で答えなさい。

( )

(3) Mr. Watt はだれに電話をしたかったと考えられますか。英語で答えなさい。

.....

(4) 本文の内容と合うものを次から1つ選び、記号で答えなさい。

[ ]

ア Mr. Knott had to walk a long way to school, because he lived in Whitebridge.

イ When Mr. Knott returned from his day's work, he was always very tired.

ウ The telephone rang in Mr. Knott's house when he was in the hall.

エ Mr. Knott wanted to know the name of the man on the phone, but the man didn't tell him his name.

オ Mr. Watt thought that the man on the phone was rude and stupid but the man on the phone didn't think that Mr. Watt was rude and stupid.

**3** Tom Smith はパリの英語学校の教師で、きょうは別の学校の英会話の試験 (oral examination) の手伝いに来ています。次の対話文を読んで、あとの問いに答えなさい。 〈広島大学附属〉

Tom : You speak English very well. I'm going to give you a very good \*mark.

Student : Thank you very much.

Tom : Not at all. Oh, when you go out, please tell the next student to come in.

Student : Certainly. Goodbye. (*Goes out and closes the door. Another person comes in.*)

Woman : Excuse me. Are you Mr. Smith? 5

Tom : Yes.  I don't teach here. I just give oral examinations here sometimes. Don't be \*nervous.

Woman : Nervous?

Tom : Now, sit down please. I'm going to ask you a few questions. Then we're going to have a short talk in English. Do you understand? 10

Woman : Yes, of course I do.

Tom : After the examination, please. Just think about my questions now. First of all, why are you learning English?

Woman : Why am I learning English?

Tom : Yes.  Are you going to be a teacher of English, or what? 15

Woman : Please stop just a minute. I really must ask you something first.

Tom : Very well. If you \*insist. What is your question?

Woman :

Tom : What? What did you say?

Woman : You see. I'm English, too. I'm one of the teachers here. I came to ask you this. 20  
"Would you like a cup of coffee?"

語句

mark 点数   nervous 緊張して   insist 言い張る

□(1) □① ~ □④ に入る最も適当な文を次からそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

□① [       ]    □② [       ]    □③ [       ]    □④ [       ]

- ア Because you like it.
- イ How about you?
- ウ You don't know me, of course.
- エ Who? Me?
- オ But may I ask you something first?
- カ I mean, what are you going to do with it?
- キ What is it about?
- ク Why do you ask?

□(2) □⑤ に入る英文を書きなさい。

-----

4 次の対話を読んで、あとの問いに答えなさい。

〈お茶の水女子大学附属〉

February 14th is \*St. Valentine's Day. Boys and girls send a Valentine card to their girl friends and boy friends.

One day Peter asked his friend John to help him when he chose a Valentine card.

Peter : I want to buy a Valentine card for your sister, Margaret.

John :  Is that right?

5

Peter : Yes, that's right.

John : Come on, then. They sell Valentine cards in this shop. Let's go in! (They go into the shop.)

Peter : This is a nice card.

John : Oh, no! I don't like it at all.

10

Peter : I think the words inside the card are very nice. Listen: "I love you, \*darling Valentine, I always want you to be mine."

John :

Peter : Why not?

John : She likes funny Valentine cards.

15

Peter : John! It's Margaret! She's coming into the shop.

John : Hide behind the door! (Margaret comes into the shop.) Hi, Margaret.

Margaret : I'm buying a Valentine card.

John :

20

Margaret : I'm going to send a card to Peter. Oh, this is a nice card. Do you like it?

John : No, I don't.

Margaret : I think it's very nice. The words inside the card are very nice. "I love you, darling Valentine, I always want you to be mine." ⑤ Why are you laughing,

John?

25

語句

St. Valentine's Day 聖バレンタインの日 darling 最愛の

□(1) □① ~ □④ に入る最も適当な文を次からそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

□① [       ]    □② [       ]    □③ [       ]    □④ [       ]

- ア What are you going to send?
- イ I like it very much.
- ウ You can't send that card to Margaret!
- エ Who is buying a Valentine card?
- オ And you want me to help you when you choose one for her.
- カ What are you doing here?
- キ Maybe you bought a funny Valentine card for her.
- ク She's coming soon, isn't she?
- ケ Who are you going to send it to?

□(2) 下線部⑤について、次の質問に対する最も適当な答えをあとから1つ選び、記号で答えなさい。

[       ]

〈質問〉 Why is John laughing?

〈答え〉 ア Because Peter bought the same card that Margaret chose.

イ Because John likes the card Margaret chose.

ウ Because Margaret chose the same card that Peter did.

エ Because John wants Margaret to buy the card for him.

□(3) 本文の内容に合うように次の質問に答えるとき、.....に適する語を書きなさい。

〈質問〉 What kind of Valentine cards does John say Margaret likes?

〈答え〉 He says she likes ..... ones.

5 次の対話を読んで、あとの問いに答えなさい。

〈巣鴨〉

A man was driving his car along a country road when he was passed by a chicken. He was traveling at 80 kilometers an hour but the chicken had passed him \*as if he was not moving. He couldn't believe his eyes. How could a chicken possibly move faster than a car? "I don't believe this," the man thought. "[A]." He \*accelerated to try to catch the chicken, but it had disappeared.

5

Soon, however, he came to a farmhouse. The farmer was outside, \*leaning on the gate and looking down the road. The man stopped his car, got out and walked up to the farmer. "[B]," he said to the farmer. "A chicken ran past me. It \*must have been running at more than eighty kilometers an hour."

"Ah," the farmer said, "that was one of mine. You didn't see where it went, did you?" he 10 asked.

"No," the man answered. "But how can a chicken run that fast?"

"Well," the farmer began, "chicken legs are a local dish in this part of the country and there is a high \*demand for them. [C] if I could \*breed chickens with three legs, not with two. I \*experimented. [D]. It's the \*additional leg that makes them 15 so fast," he said.

"That's very interesting," the man said. "And what do these three-legged chickens taste like?"

"I don't know," the farmer said. "[E]."

語句

as if まるで~かのように accelerate 加速する lean よりかかる  
 must have been running 走っていたにちがいない demand 需要 breed 育てる  
 experiment 実験する additional 付加された

□ (1) [A] ~ [E] に入る最も適当な文を次からそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

□ A [ ] □ B [ ] □ C [ ] □ D [ ] □ E [ ]

ア I've just seen the most amazing thing

イ It must be a trick

ウ I thought no one wanted to breed such funny chickens

エ I've never been able to catch the chicken

オ I learned that I could make more money

カ Soon I succeeded in breeding three-legged chickens

□(2) 本文の内容に合うように、次の英文に続く最も適当なものを次からそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

□① [        ]    □② [        ]    □③ [        ]    □④ [        ]    □⑤ [        ]

① The man couldn't catch the chicken because

- ア it was hard for him to drive along the country road.
- イ it disappeared as soon as he saw it.
- ウ it ran too fast for him to catch.
- エ he couldn't drive his car at full speed.

② When the man saw the farmer,

- ア he wanted to know whose chicken it was.
- イ he told the farmer that the chicken was running at eighty kilometers an hour.
- ウ he asked the farmer to sell him the chicken.
- エ he told the farmer how surprised he was at the chicken.

③ The farmer wanted to breed three-legged chickens because

- ア it took him little time to breed them.
- イ it was easy for him to breed this kind of chicken.
- ウ he wanted to know more about three-legged chickens.
- エ he knew many people in this part of the country wanted to eat chicken legs.

④ When the man asked how a chicken could run so fast, the farmer

- ア showed no interest in the question.
- イ didn't understand why the man was passed by a chicken.
- ウ didn't believe his ears.
- エ started to explain the reason to the man.

⑤ The farmer didn't know what the three-legged chickens tasted like because

- ア he didn't like to kill any of the chickens he was breeding.
- イ he was much more interested in making money than in tasting them.
- ウ he never cooked or ate them before.
- エ he ate them such a long time ago that he couldn't remember what they tasted like.

1 次の文章を読んで、あとの問いに答えなさい。

(ラ・サール)

During my homestay in Kyoto, the people have been very kind and helpful to me; not only my host family, but also my friends at the university. There was, however, one thing I had to become familiar with; in Japan language is used in a different way from that in America. Most Japanese say things to make the other person feel comfortable, but the words usually hide real feelings. This is ( a ) good ( b ) bad, just different from the way Americans use words. When we Americans say something, we are expected to mean it, or we are thought to be ( ① ) or \*insincere. 5

When I came to Japan, I believed everything everyone said. “Nihongo ga ojouzu desu ne” really made me believe that I could speak Japanese. But when I heard my host mother say “Nihongo ga ojouzu desu ne” to an American friend of mine, who really could only say ‘arigato’ and ‘sayonara’, I knew that she really did not mean what she said. “Nihongo ga ojouzu desu ne” is just what Japanese people say to make foreigners feel ( ② ), and it does not mean that they really can speak Japanese. Now, every time a Japanese person says to me, “Nihongo ga ojouzu desu ne,” I know that my Japanese is still quite ( ③ ), and they are trying to \*comfort me. Once an American businessman told me that when a foreigner’s Japanese is really good, a Japanese will never say “Nihongo ga ojouzu desu ne” because that may hurt that speaker’s pride and feelings. 10 15

I still have trouble in believing what Japanese people say, and sometimes I do not know whether my understanding of their words is correct. Japanese people always tell me that they communicate in silence, when ( ④ ) feelings are shown; they say that we can never trust words. I think that this \*statement tells us something about ( c ) culture, a culture where words are only a form, with feelings hidden under the \*surface. It is a good way of communication for me, because without ( ⑤ ) knowledge of Japanese, I can get the meaning through silence. This is often how words are used in Japan. ( d ) children are usually taught to think that words show exactly what we mean. I believe in the truth of words so strongly that I still find it difficult to get used to Japanese way of using words. 20 25

## 語句

insincere 不誠実な    comfort 慰める    statement 言葉    surface 表面



*Hello.*

*Good morning.*

*Have you eaten yet?* [No English-speaking people use this question as a greeting.]

*Where are you going?* [No English-speaking people use this question as a greeting.]

These are greetings which people around the world use when they meet each other. But 5  
what is a greeting?

A greeting is a way of being friendly to someone. It is also a way of starting a  
\*conversation. In many languages a question is used as a greeting: "How's everything?"  
"Where are you going?" But questions like these are not real questions. They do not  
need a \*complete answer or even a true one. In English, for example, the most \*common 10  
greeting is a question about a person's health: "How are you?" But we do not \*expect the  
person to tell us about their health problems when they answer. We do not expect them  
to talk about their headache or their \*backache, if they have one. People answer these  
questions by saying such things as "I'm fine, thanks." In the same way, when a Japanese  
greet another Japanese with "Where are you going?", a simple answer such as "Just over 15  
there," is fine. You may answer \*seriously, but it is quite all right if you do not say where  
you are going.

In most languages, a greeting is usually followed by "small talk". Small talk means the  
little things we talk about at the start of a conversation. In English-speaking countries  
people often make small talk about the weather: "Nice day, isn't it?" "\*Terrible weather, 20  
isn't it?" But there is something special about small talk, \*especially between people who  
do not know each other well enough. It must be about something which both people have  
the same \*opinion about. Small talk lets both people \*agree on something. This makes  
people more \*comfortable because talking becomes easier. People usually agree about the  
weather, so it is a safe \*topic for small talk, but \*religion or \*politics is not \*suitable for 25  
small talk in English.

Greetings and small talk are an important part of conversation in any language. The  
way people greet each other and the things they talk about, however, may be different from  
one language to another. This shows that there is much more to know when we learn a  
language than just the \*vocabulary and the \*grammar of the language. We also have to 30  
learn \*social \*behavior, or in other words, the way different people \*act and think in the  
\*situations they are in.

語句

conversation 会話 complete 完全な common ふつうの、ありふれた  
 expect ... to ~ ...が~することを期待する backache 背中・腰の痛み seriously まじめに  
 terrible ひどい especially 特に opinion 意見  
 agree on/about] ... ...について意見が一致する comfortable 快適な topic 話題  
 religion 宗教 politics 政治 suitable 適切な vocabulary 語い grammar 文法  
 social 社会的な behavior 行動、ふるまい act 行動する situation 状況

(問) 本文の内容に合うように、次の( )の中に適当な日本語を入れて、記述を完成しなさい。ただし、指定された文字数で答えること。

(1) Greeting とは( ① )手段であり、また( ② )手段である。

① ( ) [10 字前後]

② ( ) [10 字前後]

(2) Greeting には( ① )がよく用いられるけれど、必ずしも( ② )を求めているわけではない。

① ( ) [5 字前後]

② ( ) [5 字前後]

(3) Small talk とは( )のことである。

( ) [20 字前後]

(4) 外国語を学習する際には語彙や文法ばかりでなく、( )も学ぶ必要がある。

( ) [20 字前後]

3 次の文章を読んで、あとの問いに答えなさい。

〈洛南〉

Today fewer people in the United States drive to work. They have not lost their jobs or started their own business — they are a new type of workers: telecommuters. Many people can work anywhere now. They need only telephones and computers. Driving to work may soon be a thing of the past.

People like telecommuting because they can have their own working schedule. They can start work when they want to. Telecommuting gives working mothers and fathers more time with their families. But telecommuting cannot help all working people. In fact, some families have problems with work at home. For example, the children may not understand that they cannot talk to mom when she is working. Some people — hospital nurses, school teachers and so on — cannot telecommute at all.

\*Employers may not like the idea of telecommuting. They may feel they cannot control people who work at home. Also, employers often believe that the best work is done when people work with people. They believe telecommuters cannot solve problems quickly because they cannot talk face to face with other workers in the office. But there are many \*advantages in telecommuting. Telecommuters may work much harder because they feel happier at home. And telecommuting can save money for desks, chairs and other things in the office. There is another advantage. Employers can hire more good workers who cannot live near the office.

Telecommuting may be good for society, too. If more people work at home, there will be fewer cars on the highways, and there will be less pollution. Also, more handicapped workers can do their jobs at home. But again, is telecommuting always good for society? If people have more chances to work at home, many may move out of the city. Then there will be fewer people in the cities. There is another problem. People who can work at home may not be able to communicate with other people well because they have little time to talk with others. These are also big problems with telecommuting.

語句

employer 雇い主 advantage 利点

(1) 本文の題名として最も適当なものを次から1つ選び、記号で答えなさい。 [ ]

- ア Some Family Problems    イ Changing of the Society  
ウ A New Style of Working    エ Problems of Telecommuting

(2) 次の文は本文中の telecommute および telecommuter の意味を説明したものです。( )の中に適当な日本語を入れて、記述を完成しなさい。

□① ( ) □② ( )  
telecommute とは、企業に( ① )ながら、( ② )で仕事をするので、telecommuter とは、そのような働き方をする者のことである。

(3) 本文の内容について次の質問に対する答えとして最も適当なものを次からそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

① 〈質問〉 Why do people want to telecommute? [ ]

〈答え〉 ア Because they don't have cars.

イ Because they have family problems.

ウ Because they don't like their employers.

エ Because they can decide their own schedules for themselves.

② 〈質問〉 Why don't some employers like telecommuting? [ ]

〈答え〉 ア Because they cannot save money.

イ Because they cannot use computers.

ウ Because they cannot control the workers.

エ Because they cannot call the workers on the telephone easily.

(4) 次のことばは誰が言ったものだと考えられますか。最も適当なものを次からそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

① "I'm very happy because Mom is always at home, but often when we sit at dinner, someone calls her on the phone." [ ]

② "Telecommuting will save our money for business, but I'm not sure we should start it this year." [ ]

③ "I'm busier than before, but I can take care of my children at home." [ ]

ア an employer      イ an office worker      ウ a hospital nurse

エ a school teacher      オ a telecommuter's son      カ a telecommuter

(5) 本文の内容と合うものを次から2つ選び、記号で答えなさい。 [ ] [ ]

ア Telecommuting is good for the environment.

イ Telecommuting is something from the past.

ウ Everybody can be a telecommuter if he or she wants to.

エ More and more people in the United States go to work by car.

オ Some telecommuters think there are problems with the employers.

カ If more people work at home, there will be some social problems.

4 次の文章を読んで、あとの問いに答えなさい。

〈栗鴨〉

The economic system of countries such as Japan, Canada, Germany, and the United States is ① the free enterprise system — the private enterprise system. This means that the government does not own most businesses. \*Individuals and groups own them. People are free to produce, buy, and sell what they want. They are free to start a new enterprise, a business.

5

In the free enterprise system, the government does not decide the price of products. The market decides ② it. But what is ③ “the market”? We know about supermarkets, \*stock markets, farmers’ markets, and meat markets. We can buy and sell things by mail, phone, and computer. These are all part of the market — the exchange of goods and services by buyers and sellers.

10

The market \*determines the price of products by two general rules: the \*law of ④ supply and the law of ⑤ demand. For example, how many tomatoes will people buy at various prices? This is demand. The law of demand \*states that people usually buy more of a product when it’s at a lower price. How many tomatoes will the sellers produce at various prices? This is supply. The law of supply states that producers will usually supply more of a product if they can increase the price. Consumers — people who buy things — want a low price, but producers need to make money. The actions of consumers and producers determine the price.

15

Let’s look at an example. A supermarket has a supply of 600 \*pounds of tomatoes at \$1.99 a pound. After two days, \*customers have bought only 100 pounds. Soon 600 more pounds are coming to the store. The store manager has a problem — an oversupply of tomatoes. This means she has a surplus — too many — so she lowers the price to \$1.09 a pound. At this low price, customers soon buy all 500 pounds. This is the ⑥ equilibrium price.

20

Another example is the price of gasoline. In 1973, \*OPEC in the Middle East stopped sending oil to Western nations, so in many countries there was a shortage of — not enough — gas and oil. Prices went ( ⑦ ) over 30 percent. In 1979, the supply of oil to the West went down again because of the \*revolution in Iran, so prices went ( ⑧ ) again. Consumers and businesses looked for ways to use less gas and oil. They were successful. Demand went ( ⑨ ), so prices started to go ( ⑩ ). The free enterprise system was ( ⑪ ).

30

語句

individual 個人 stock 株式 determine … …を決定する law 法則  
 state … …と述べてある pound ポンド(=約 0.5kg) customer 顧客  
 OPEC 石油輸出国機構 revolution 革命

(1) 下線部①の特徴として当てはまらないものを次から1つ選び、記号で答えなさい。 [ ]

- ア 政府が保有している企業が少ない。
- イ 会社をおこすことが比較的簡単にできる。
- ウ 大部分の個人企業や会社が政府に管理されている。
- エ 生産、売買があまり制約されずにできる。

(2) 下線部②が指すものを、本文中の英語で答えなさい。 \_\_\_\_\_

(3) 下線部③を最も適切に説明している箇所を、最初の2語と最後の2語で答えなさい。

最初 \_\_\_\_\_ 最後 \_\_\_\_\_

(4) 下線部④と⑤のそれぞれの説明として最も適当なものを次から1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

- ア 買い手側がどれだけ品物を買いたいかということ。  ④ [ ]  ⑤ [ ]
- イ 売り手側がどれだけ品物を売りたいかということ。
- ウ 買い手側ができるだけ安く品物を買いたいということ。
- エ 売り手側ができるだけ高く品物を売りたいということ。

(5) 下線部⑥の説明として最も適当なものを次から1つ選び、記号で答えなさい。 [ ]

- ア 消費者の要求に生産者が合わせた価格。
- イ 生産者と消費者の両方が満足いく取引ができる価格。
- ウ 生産者と小売店が打ち合わせて決めた価格。
- エ 暮らしに必要な品物に対して政府が決めた価格。

(6) ( ⑦ )～( ⑩ )にはそれぞれ次のどちらかの語が入る。適当な方を選び、記号で答えなさい。

⑦ [ ]  ⑧ [ ]  ⑨ [ ]  ⑩ [ ]

- ア up    イ down

(7) ( ⑪ )に入る最も適当な語を次から1つ選び、記号で答えなさい。 [ ]

- ア doing    イ going    ウ making    エ working

1 次の文章を読んで、あとの問いに答えなさい。

〈お茶の水女子大学附属〉

The names of the months all come from \*Latin. Many of the names were names of \*Roman gods. January, March, May, June — these months \*are named after Roman gods. January, the first month of the year, is named after ① the god Janus. Janus was a strange god with two faces. He could look in two \*directions. He could look \*forward and back at the same time. He was the god of endings and beginnings. In January, one looks forward 5 to the new year. One also looks back to the old year.

The name February comes from a Roman \*celebration. The name of this celebration was Februa. It was a celebration of cleaning. At the end of February, after the long winter months, women begin to think of spring-cleaning. Probably this was the origin of the name of the month. February has only 28 days. \*Every fourth year it has an \*extra day making 10 a \*total of 29 days. ② The reason for this is that in every year there are exactly 365 days and six hours. At the end of four years these six extra hours of each year make 24 hours or one full day. In this fourth year, February has 29 days, and we call it ③ “Leap Year.”

The third month, March, is named after the Roman god of war, Mars. Mars was a strong god. The Roman people always \*connected him with \*thunder and \*lightning. Pictures of 15 Mars always show him with lightning about his head. March is a month of \*storms. The wind blows strongly. It rains very hard. There is often thunder and lightning.

The seventh month of the year, July, is named after \*Julius Caesar. Before the time of Caesar another \*calendar was used. The year began in March \*instead of January. The \*present month of July was then fifth month instead of the seventh month. Caesar 20 changed this. He made a new calendar. This is the calendar we use today. Caesar himself was born in July. He gave the name of July to this month, the seventh month of the new calendar.

## 語句

Latin ラテン語(古代ローマの言語) Roman (古代)ローマの  
 be named after … …にちなんで名づけられている direction 方向 forward 前を[に]  
 celebration 祭典 every fourth year 4年ごとに extra よぶんの total 合計  
 connect … with … …を～と結びつけて考える thunder 雷 lightning 稲妻 storm 嵐  
 Julius Caesar 古代ローマの独裁者(100 - 44B.C.) calendar 暦 instead of … …のかわりに  
 present 現在の



2 次の文章を読んで、あとの問いに答えなさい。

〈大阪教育大学附属平野〉

Every year, many foreign visitors to London go to a famous street. Many of them even want to see \*Sherlock Holmes there. He is very famous in the world and has many hobbies. He likes playing the violin while he is solving one of his mysteries. Maybe some visitors think they will hear the sound of his violin. ① London doesn't want its foreign visitors to feel sad. The city has built the kind of house that was popular around ② 1890. 5  
Of course, it is not the real thing, but looks just the same as the house in the Sherlock Holmes stories.

How was Sherlock Holmes created? If you really want to know, you should visit Scotland. At a university there the writer of the Sherlock Holmes stories studied medicine. The name of the writer was Conan Doyle. He first got the idea of Sherlock Holmes from 10  
his teacher Dr. Bell. Like Holmes, Dr. Bell could give the life history of any dead body who was put before him. In one case, Dr. Bell said, "The angry and liked crying." How did he know? By smelling the dead man's mouth, and looking at the lines of his face and his strong legs. Conan Doyle never forgot ③ this special gift Dr. Bell had.

Conan Doyle wanted to be a doctor, but nobody came to see him. He spent his time in 15  
writing the Sherlock Holmes stories. He only ④ ( as / writing / his / a / thought / hobby / of ). He didn't think his stories were very interesting. He was not making much money as a doctor, so he sold his stories. They were a success. First, they were written in a magazine. Later, they were all put together in a book.

The British people loved Sherlock Holmes, but Conan Doyle did ⑤ not. He wanted to stop 20  
writing these stories. In one story, Holmes was pushed off a high and dangerous place. ⑥ The readers were very angry. They wrote many letters. "Why was our hero Sherlock Holmes killed?" Conan Doyle didn't enjoy writing Holmes stories, but he had to ( ⑦ )  
writing. In the next story, he wrote that Holmes didn't really fall to his death. He caught a branch of a tree while he was falling. 25

Sherlock Holmes lived and solved many more mysteries. In the hearts and minds of lots of people, he lives on to this day.

語句

Sherlock Holmes シャーロック・ホームズ(イギリスの小説家であるコナン・ドイルの探偵小説の主人公)



The idea that one day Man might fly had <sup>a</sup>(draw) the attention of many people in different parts of the world since early times. <sup>①</sup>At first it was thought that a man wearing very strong wings would be able to fly like a bird. Indeed, one or two brave people had actually tested this idea by fixing large man-made wings to their shoulders and then trying to fly off high buildings. But they <sup>b</sup>(fall) to the ground like stones and died.

5

Such experiments made people sure that Man would never be able to fly like a bird because <sup>②</sup>his arms are not powerful enough to move the very large wings needed to fly in the air. The next step was to try to design some form of flying machine which could carry a man through the air <sup>③</sup>mechanically. One of the first people to be interested in this idea was the famous Italian painter and inventor, Leonardo da Vinci. In the early part of the sixteenth century, it is believed that he made a balloon which would lift a man up into the air, and would stay in the air. It was full of hot air and was lighter than the air around it. But nothing came of Leonardo's invention.

10

In 1783 — more than 100 years before Wilbur Wright and his brother Orville Wright began their serious study of flight — two French brothers made a successful flight in a hot-air balloon and <sup>④</sup>not long afterwards, another Frenchman made a journey <sup>⑤</sup>(hydrogen gas / with / in / filled / a balloon). After that, flights with “lighter-than-air” craft became common, but no one had yet succeeded in building a successful “heavier-than-air” machine. <sup>⑥</sup>That was what the Wright brothers hoped to do.

15

In 1896 Otto Lilienthal, another inventor, lost his life while trying to fly. This news made the Wrights even more determined to succeed in their own experiments. They read every book and paper on flight, including papers by Lilienthal himself. They realized that, though much time and money had been <sup>c</sup>(spend) on experiments, no one had yet succeeded in staying in the air for more than a few seconds at a time, and that nothing had really been achieved.

25

The Wrights decided that <sup>⑦</sup>the reason why there was little progress was that no way had yet been discovered of keeping the balance of a “heavier-than-air” machine while it was in the air. So the brothers began by trying to find out how to maintain that balance.

(1) 下線部①, ②, ⑦を日本語に直しなさい。

- ① ( )  
 ② ( )  
 ⑦ ( )

(2) 下線部③と同じ意味になるように, 次の \_\_\_\_\_ に適当な前置詞を書き入れなさい。

\_\_\_\_\_ using human power

(3) 下線部④と同じ意味になるように, 次の \_\_\_\_\_ に適当な語を書き入れなさい。

\_\_\_\_\_ after they succeeded in flying in a hot-air balloon

(4) 下線部⑤の( )内の語句を意味の通るように並べかえなさい。

\_\_\_\_\_

(5) 下線部⑥が指している内容を日本語で答えなさい。

( )

(6) 下線部aとcの語を過去分詞に, bの語を過去形に直して書きなさい。

a \_\_\_\_\_     b \_\_\_\_\_     c \_\_\_\_\_

Primitive man found out by trial and error how to carry out a certain number of simple chemical changes, but under the ancient Egyptian civilization men learned how to work copper, tin, iron and precious metals; knew how to make pottery, glass, soap and colouring agents, and how to bleach and dye textile fabrics. These arts were the beginnings of the chemical industries of today.

5

The early scientific study of chemistry, known as alchemy, grew up in the first few centuries A.D. at Alexandria in Egypt. There two important things came together: one was the practical knowledge of the Egyptian workers in metals, pottery and dyes; the other was ① the learning of the earlier Greek philosophers, such as Hippocrates and Aristotle. At the same time alchemy was much influenced by ideas from the East about magic and astrology — foretelling the future from the stars.

② Greek philosophers regarded debate about the nature of matter as superior to experiment, and some held that all matter was made up of the same four 'elements' — earth, fire, air and water. Many people therefore thought that if these elements could be rearranged, one substance could be changed into another. For instance, a \*base metal could perhaps be turned into gold. The chief aim of the alchemists was to find a way of doing this.

15

Alchemy came under Arab influence when the armies of Islam conquered Egypt during the seventh century. The Arabs carried its study into Western Europe when they advanced into Spain. ③ Many Arabic words are still used in chemistry — 'alkali', 'alcohol' and even 'alchemy' itself, which means 'the art of Egypt'. The greatest Arab alchemist was \*Jabir ibn Hayyan, possibly the same person as Geber, author of two important books on alchemy known from the Latin translations of the thirteenth century. Jabir claimed that \*mercury and sulphur were 'elements' like the four Greek ones. He said that all metals were composed of mercury and sulphur in different proportions. To change a base metal into gold required the proportions to be changed by the action of a mysterious substance which came to be called 'the philosopher's stone'. Alchemists searched in vain for this substance for several hundred years.

25

Alchemy was studied widely in Europe during the twelfth and following centuries, and attracted the attention of many learned men. Though they were doomed to fail in their attempts to make gold, their work led to the growth of a great deal of new chemical

30



1 次の文章を読んで、あとの問いに答えなさい。

(東京学芸大学附属)

Something you never see may save your life when you are walking across the street.

What is it?

Each year people spend a lot of money to fill their rooms with something they never see.

What is it?

If you are in one room, what \*helps you to know who is talking in the next room?

5

The answer to all these questions is SOUND.

Sound is a big part of your life. But what makes sound? How does it travel?

Sound starts from something that \*vibrates, or moves \*back and forth. When you play the piano or ring a \*bell, you are vibrating things. Vibrating things makes sound. When you talk, your \*tongue, \*vocal cords, and \*lips move back and forth. They move the air.

10

How does sound travel? Sound travels \*in waves of moving air. We cannot see sound waves, but they \*act like water waves. When you throw a stone into a pond, it makes small \*circles of waves. They then \*spread out into larger circles.

Sound waves travel in the same way through the air. Here is something you can do to show how sound waves travel. \*Stand some books up \*in a row close to each other.

15

Push the first book. This push will travel from the first book to the next one. It goes down the line, and finally the last book will fall. You do not push the last book yourself. You push only the first book. But this push \*is passed on from the first book down to the last one.

The same kind of push sends sound waves through the air. The push goes from one \*speck of the air to the next one. It continues, and moves the air next to your \*eardrum. This moving vibrates your eardrum, and then you hear something!

20

Because of these simple \*facts, you hear many things — the voice of a friend, the song of a bird, and the \*whisper of the wind.

語句

help ~ to ...	～が…するのを助ける	vibrate	震動する；震動させる	back and forth	前後に	bell	ベル
tongue	舌	vocal cord	声帯	lip	口びる	in waves	波となって
circle	輪	spread	広がる	stand	立てる	in a row	一列に
speck	微量	eardrum	鼓膜	fact	事実	is passed on	伝えられる
				whisper	ささやき		

[問] 本文の内容と一致するように、 ~  に入る最も適当な語句をそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

① [       ]     ② [       ]     ③ [       ]     ④ [       ]     ⑤ [       ]

Sound is something you cannot see, but you hear a sound .

You cannot see sound waves, but you can see  by watching water waves in a pond.

Sound is carried by air in waves, so you cannot hear any sound .

Sound waves made by vibrating things continue to go through the air .

If you stand some books up in a row close to each other and push the first book, all the books will fall one by one, .

- ア how they travel in the air
- イ when something has vibrated
- ウ if there is no air in a room
- エ why they act like sound waves
- オ and finally reach your eardrum
- カ if you don't have to push the last one
- キ or help them travel in waves of moving air
- ク because your push of the first one is passed on
- ケ that sound waves move in the same way in the air
- コ if your tongue, vocal cords, and lips move back and forth

2 次の文章を読んで、あとの問いに答えなさい。

〈東大寺学園〉

The sun is the star nearest to the earth. It is so close that light from the sun reaches us in about 8 minutes. But it takes ( ① ) than four years for light from the next nearest star to reach us. Because the sun is so close, it is very important for us.

You know that all our heat and light come from the sun. But the sun produces much more heat and light than we receive. In fact, the earth receives only 0.00000005% of the total. Most of it rushes past us into space. 5

(A) However, the earth is at just the right distance from the sun to receive enough heat for life to go on.

What will happen when the sun starts to run out of \*fuel some ten \*billion years or more from now? Of course, no one can say for sure. However, some scientists believe that they know what happens to the sun and its planets. 10

You may think that the sun will cool down after a long while. But these scientists believe that the sun will not cool down. Indeed, they think it will get ( ② ) before it cools.

The sun is made mostly of \*hydrogen. After a long while, the hydrogen will be used up. When that happens, (B) ( a faster rate / at / does / heat and light / it / now / produce / than / the sun / will ). The brightness of the sun will increase a hundred times within four or five million years. The earth will \*melt down into balls of \*lava. 15

Then the sun will get ( ③ ) quickly. It will become only a few thousand miles across. It will still be bright, but it will give nearly as much heat as the full moon does today. 20

This is only one idea about the future of the sun. It is not wise to say that these events are sure to occur, for we still do not fully understand what takes place inside the sun. Even when (C) we do, we may still be unable to tell exactly what is going to happen.

語句

fuel 燃料 billion 10億 hydrogen 水素 melt 溶ける lava 溶岩



3 次の文章を読んで、あとの問いに答えなさい。

〈桐朋〉

When you cut your skin, you \*bleed. Everyone knows that. If a person <sup>(a)</sup>loses a great deal of \*blood, he will become ill and may die. Blood is very important. People have always known that. At one time, some people drank blood to make them strong!

(A) When doctors understood how blood went around inside the body, they tried ways of giving blood to people who need it. They used a \*rubber tube to take blood from healthy people and give it to people who need it. (B) We call this "blood transfusion". The blood went through a rubber tube from the arm of the healthy person into the arm of sick person.

But there were two problems. First, it did not always work. Sometimes people died. Later, doctors <sup>(b)</sup>found the reason for this. We do not all have the same kind of blood. There are four groups — O, A, B and AB. We all have blood of one of these groups. The doctors found that they could give blood of group O to anyone safely.

(C) They found that they could give any kind of blood to people of group AB. But they found that they must give A-group blood to A-group people and B-group blood to B-group people.

There was another problem. To give blood of the right kind, the doctors had to find a person of the right blood group. Often they could not find a person ( ① ) time. If they had a way to keep the blood until someone needed it, they could always have the right kind of blood. ( ② ) first they found they could keep it in bottles for fifteen to twenty days. They did this ( ③ ) making it very cold. Then they found ( ④ ) to keep it longer. In the end they found a way of keeping blood ( ⑤ ) a very long time.

Now people can give a \*pint of blood every three months, if they want to. The blood is put in bottles and then kept until someone needs it. We call a place where we keep money a "bank". We call a place where we keep blood a "blood bank".

One day, when you are older, you may <sup>(c)</sup>decide to give blood to a "blood bank". In this way you may \*stop someone from dying.

Or perhaps one day you may have an accident or become ill. You may need blood. The "blood bank" will give it to you.

語句

bleed 血を流す blood 血液 rubber tube ゴム管 pint バイント(約0.4737リットル)  
stop ~ from ... ~が...するのを防ぐ

(1) 次の各組の中から、下線部(a)~(c)の単語のアクセントのある母音と同じ母音を持つ語をそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

(a) loses (ア flood イ lot ウ rose エ food) [ ]

(b) found (ア shoulder イ group ウ house エ should) [ ]

(c) decide (ア polite イ police ウ invitation エ finger) [ ]

(2) 下線部(A)を日本語に直しなさい。

( )

(3) 下線部(B)を受動態の文に書きかえなさい。

.....

(4) 下線部(C)と同じ意味になるように、次の文の \_\_\_\_\_ に適当な語を書き入れなさい。

They found that they \_\_\_\_\_ give any kind of blood to people of group AB.

(5) ( ① )~( ⑤ )に入る適当な語をそれぞれ1つずつ選び、記号で答えなさい。

① [ ]  ② [ ]  ③ [ ]  ④ [ ]  ⑤ [ ]

① ア in イ by ウ for エ at

② ア For イ On ウ At エ In

③ ア for イ to ウ in エ by

④ ア what イ when ウ where エ how

⑤ ア in イ for ウ on エ at

(6) 本文の内容と合うものを次から2つ選び、記号で答えなさい。

[ ] [ ]

ア Some people don't understand that blood is very important.

イ Doctors didn't know why blood transfusion didn't always work, but they found the reason later.

ウ Doctors can give any kind of blood to O-group people.

エ We can keep blood for more than twenty days now.

オ People have to give a pint of blood every three months.

カ In a blood bank you can keep money to buy blood when you need it.

4 次の会話を読んで、あとの問いに答えなさい。

〈筑波大学附属駒場〉

Mr. White : Have you ever heard of “the greenhouse \*effect”?

Ken : No, I haven't. What's that?

Mr. White : A greenhouse is a building made of glass. We can grow flowers and other \*plants in it.

Ken : Do you have to use a greenhouse to grow any flowers and plants? 5

Mr. White : Not really. We use a greenhouse when we need a lot of \*warmth.

Ken : Is it always warm in a greenhouse?

Mr. White : Yes. When the sun shines in through the glass, it becomes warm in a greenhouse, and the \*heat won't go out because of the \*roof and walls.

Ken : I see. Now, what is “the greenhouse effect”? 10

Mr. White : Well, around the earth, there is a belt of \*gases that works just like a greenhouse. The sun shines in, and the belt of gases catches the heat and keeps it near to the earth.

Ken : Oh, I see. Then “the greenhouse effect” is a good thing because we can't live without warmth. 15

Mr. White : Yes, but wait a minute. There is a problem.

Ken : A problem?

Mr. White : Factories and cars are making a lot of new gases. Even from trees, when they're cut down, gases come out. These new gases are catching more and more heat from the sun. This is called “the greenhouse effect”. 20

Ken : Will there be anything bad if the earth gets more heat?

Mr. White : Yes, if the earth becomes hotter even just a little, it may change the weather all over the world in big ways.

Ken : What will happen then?

Mr. White : Well, places that are warm will be too hot to live in, and places that are cold 25 will become warm. The most important thing is that the places which grow most of our food will become too hot to grow food any more.

Ken : Wow, that's a big problem. What shall I do if there is no food on the earth?

Mr. White : So we must learn much more about the earth. And also we should know what to do to ( ) the earth. 30

語句

effect 効果 plant 植物 warmth 暖かさ heat 熱 roof 屋根 gases 気体



1 次の文章を読んで、あとの問いに答えなさい。

〈関西学院〉

A father and his son were once riding their \*donkey along a country road. They wanted to sell the donkey at the \*market in the town. On their way to the town they passed some young girls who were taking water from a \*pond. "Look," said one of the girls, "see those foolish people riding a little donkey. Their donkey looks tired and it is going to die soon."

① As soon as the father heard her words, he got down from the donkey.

5

It was not long before they came to some old men. "Look now," said one of the old men to the others. "I feel sorry to say that today's young people don't take care of old people. See that the boy is riding the donkey while his poor old father is walking by his side." When the father heard this, he told his son to get down from the donkey. And then he rode on the donkey himself.

10

Right after that, they met three women with babies in their arms. "What a bad father!" said the women together. "How can you ride the donkey when the boy looks so tired? You ride like a king!" The father got angry at their words. "How can you say that to me? I followed the advice twice. Now you give me different advice. Why do I have to follow it now?"

15

② Just before they reached the town, the boy got so tired that he fell to the ground. He could not stand up on his feet.

Then the father sold the donkey at the market and got a lot of money. But in the end he lost the money. Why? Because he had to pay all the money to a doctor who took care of his son. It was a long way to the market, but the father felt it much longer on the way back home.

20

語句

donkey ロバ market 市場 pond 池



2 次の文章を読んで、あとの問いに答えなさい。

〈筑波大学附属駒場〉

It was cool fall afternoon in New York. The woman was putting on a long black dress, a hat, and a pair of \*shades. "I'm going to go to the movies this evening," she thought, and smiled. Ten minutes later she took the elevator to the first floor, walked out of the apartment building, stopped for a minute, and looked at all the noisy cars in the street. Next she looked at the people on the \*sidewalk. There were so many of them. "Is this a 5 good idea?" she asked herself. Then she put her handbag under one arm and called a taxi. "Of course it is."

The trip to the movie theater took five minutes. In those five minutes the woman found that she still loved New York. OK — her apartment was cold in the winter. Yes, there were a lot of dangerous people in the streets. Everything in the stores was expensive. 10 The streets were not clean. It was all true, but... well, New York was her home.

At the movie theater there were only thirty or forty people. The woman sat at the back of the theater. Two minutes later the movie began. Then, and only then, she took off her shades.

It was a good story. She remembered it well. She even remembered some of the \*dialog. 15 And then, of course, there was the \*actor with the black hair.

"He was my favorite actor," she thought. "I really loved him in the 1930s."

She left quietly a few minutes before the end. Another taxi? "No," she thought. "I'll take the \*subway."

At ten fifty she was near her apartment. She was happy. "That was fun," she said to 20 herself. The front door of her building was just three feet away. She took off her shades and looked up at the stars for a minute. It was only for a minute, but that was long enough. A man on the sidewalk stopped. He came up to her. "Excuse me," he said, "but aren't you...?"

"No!" said the woman. Her voice was cold and hard. "No, I'm not!" Then she put on 25 her shades again and walked quickly into the apartment building.

語句

shades サングラス    sidewalk 歩道    dialog セリふ、対話    actor 俳優  
subway 地下鉄



3 次の文章を読んで、あとの問いに答えなさい。

〈西大和〉

When I was a teenager, my father and I were standing in line to buy tickets for the circus. At last, there was only one family between us and the ticket counter. I can't and won't forget this family. There were eight children, all probably under the age of 12. You could tell they didn't have a lot of money. Their clothes were not expensive, but they were clean. The children were ① well-behaved, all of them standing in line, two-by-two behind their parents, holding hands. They were excitedly talking about the \*clowns, elephants and other acts they would see that night. One would think they had never been to the circus before. It would be the best time of their young lives.

The father and mother were standing proudly at the head of the family. The mother was holding her husband's hand, looking up at him and said, "You're my \*knight in shining \*armor." He was smiling in pride, looking at her and answered, "That's quite right." ② The beautiful ticket lady asked the father how many tickets he wanted. He proudly responded, "I would like to buy eight children's tickets and two adult tickets in order to take my family to the circus."

The ticket lady told him the price. The man's wife \*let go of his hand, her head dropped, the man's lip began to \*quiver. ③ The father went a little closer to the counter and asked, "How much did you say?" The ticket lady again told the price. The man didn't have enough money. He thought, "④ How can I turn and tell my kids that I don't have enough money to take them to the circus?"

My father saw what was happening, he put his hand into his pocket, pulled out \$20 \*bill and dropped it on the ground. (We were not rich at all!) My father reached down, picked up the bill, \*tapped the man on the shoulder and said, "Excuse me, sir, this fell out of your pocket." The man knew ⑤ it. He wasn't asking for the money but certainly thanked my dad for the help in a \*desperate situation. He looked straight into my dad's eyes, took my dad's hand in ⑥ both of his, and held the \$20 bill tightly. His lip quivered and a tear ran down his cheek. He replied, "Thank you, thank you, sir. This really means a lot to me and my family." My father and I went back to our car and drove home. We didn't go to the circus that night, but we didn't \*go without.

語句

clown 道化師 knight 騎士 armor よろいかぶと let go of ...を放す quiver 震える  
bill 紙幣 tap 軽くたたく desperate situation 絶体絶命の状況 go without ...なしで我慢する

(1) 下線部①の意味として最も適当なものを次から1つ選び、記号で答えなさい。 [ ]

- ア かわいらしい                      イ 行儀がよい                      ウ 顔の輪郭がよく似た
- エ とてもおとなしい              オ 年の割にはおとなびた

(2) 下線部②と同じ意味になるように、次の文の \_\_\_\_\_ に入る適当な語を1語ずつ答えなさい。

The beautiful ticket lady said to the father, "How many \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_?"



4 次の文章はシーラ (Sheila Hocken) という目の不自由なイギリス人女性が書いた伝記“Emma & I”の一部です。文章を読んで、あとの問いに答えなさい。 (城北)

“Please, Miss, I can't see the blackboard!”

① “Neither can I. ② Can you move her, Miss?”

“No,” said my English teacher. “Sheila can't see the blackboard very well. Her eyesight is bad. She has to get close to the board.”

It was true. At the age of eleven my eyesight was very poor. There were schools for those who couldn't see. But my parents didn't want me to go away to a school for blind children. We lived in a big city in the center of England, Nottingham. Neither my father nor my mother could see well. But they managed to get about. We lived quite happily, my father and mother and my older brother Graham. Graham's eyesight was poor. But ③ he could see better than I. He read stories to me. 5 10

When I left school, I learned to be a telephone operator. Then I got my first job in a big shop. But as the months passed, my eyesight got worse. At seventeen I couldn't see my way about the house or the street. I was now unable to read at all. Blind people can read by touching and feeling the points on Braille paper. So I had to learn Braille. I didn't want to use a white stick. I wouldn't ask for help. I was a girl of seventeen and I wanted 15 to be like other people. But I was a great danger to \*motorists when I walked among the cars.

One evening changed my life. I was going home from work as usual. I had to take two buses. I got off the first one, and walked slowly towards the stop for the second bus. But I fell against something hard. “I'm sorry,” I said. I stepped forward again. But again I 20 met the hard thing. Then I realized. I was saying sorry to a tall street light. I laughed and went on, and found the right bus stop. But at this stop the bus didn't always wait. You had to make a sign to the driver, and of course you had to know it was the right bus. That evening there was no one there to ask. So I walked to the next stop. Here again there was no one to ask. I went on to the next stop, and the same thing happened. By 25 this time I was quite lost. In the end I walked back to the city center, which was about eight kilometers. I knew I could catch the right bus there! At last I got home — three hours later than usual. I was tired and unhappy.

But we had a visitor at home. He was Mr. Brown, my home teacher. Home teachers visit the blind to talk to them, and they bring Braille paper and other helpful things. Mr. 30 Brown visited our family quite often, because none of us could see well.

“Oh, Sheila, you're very late. I've been waiting a long time to see you,” he said. I told him what happened. He asked at once, “Why don't you have a guide dog?”

They were ④ the seven most important words in my life up to that time. A guide dog



One day a poor young boy named Jack came to the city to make a lot of money. He walked around the city to look for work, but he could not find any. Finally that night he felt so tired, and stopped at Martin's Fine Jewelry. His eyes were caught by the gold which was \*shining in the light of the moon. He lay down at the door and went to sleep.

The next morning, his back was hit hard with a \*broom. Martin looked down at the poor young boy. "Go away!" he shouted. 5

"Please, \*sir," said Jack. "I'm looking for a job to make a lot of money."

"I have no job for you," he said.

"I will work hard and do anything you ask in return for food and a place to sleep," said Jack. 10

"Very well," he said, and gave the broom to Jack. "You may start by cleaning the shop. You can work for one month in return for food and a sleeping place. If you work hard enough, we will talk about a \*wage."

Jack thanked Martin and started working. While he was cleaning, a large elegant cat walked into the room. Her hair was black. Her long tail \*curled high above her back. 15 She looked carefully at Jack with her green eyes. When he tried to touch her, she pushed her body around his legs. What a beautiful cat! "What do you call her, sir?" he asked. "① No name. I just keep it to catch \*mice," Martin answered. "Get back to your work." That night, when Jack lay down on the old bed in the \*workroom, the cat came to him. "I will call you Belle," Jack said to her, "because it is the most beautiful name I know." 20

Weeks passed, and Martin was surprised to see how hard Jack worked. ② He smiled. He didn't have to give Jack any money, but just a cheap meal at the end of the day.

For Jack, the one bright thing in his life was Belle. In the early evening, while Martin made his jewelry, she usually sat by his chair. Her tail was \*sweeping across the floor. At night she ( ㉠ ) with Jack on the bed and slept together. When Martin went home, 25 he locked Jack in the workroom. He also \*hid the \*candles. Jack had to spend his nights in the dark room.

One early morning, Jack woke up when he heard a strange sound under his bed. ア Belle was playing with a \*half-burned candle. イ Under the bed there were many more. ウ Jack looked at Belle, and she looked back. エ

That day, with a cent he luckily found under the bed, Jack bought a box of \*matches. オ That night, he brought out the short candles. カ "Now, Belle," he said when he \*struck a match, "we will have a special time." キ Jack called to the cat, "Come, Belle." 30

Her tail curled highly. She walked toward him. What a surprise! Belle's long black

tail was shining in the light. He saw shining things among the hairs of her tail. "What are they? Where did they come from?" he thought. Suddenly, he remembered Belle always sat near Martin's chair while he was making his jewelry. Her tail was sweeping across the floor like a broom! Quickly Jack took out a piece of paper and ( ㉔ ) Belle on it. With his fingers, he gently and carefully \*brushed her tail. Gold \*dust rained on the paper!

The next morning, Jack talked to Martin. "Sir, I have now worked for one month. You promised that at the end of a month you would give me wages. Now I do not ask for money, but may I keep the dust from Belle's tail?"

He was surprised and said, "You are asking for dust as a wage?"

"Yes," Jack answered. Martin almost started to laugh, but tried to look ( ㉕ ).

"Very well," he said. "You may keep the dust as your wage. Go back to work." For a moment, Jack's eyes met Martin's. The boy smiled. That ( ㉖ ) Martin a little, but he soon stopped thinking about it. "Jack is a silly boy, so he works hard only for a meal, a bed, and the dust from the cat's tail," he thought.

Many months passed. Every night by the light of the candle, Jack carefully brushed Belle's tail. He saved all the shining dust in his old bag.

Jack worked so hard that he usually finished all his work before the end of the day. Then he quietly watched Martin's way of ( ㉗ ).

One day, Jack learned from Martin how to set a stone into a ring. The next day, he learned how to make a necklace. Jack learned skills one after another. ( ㉘ ) did all the work for ( ㉙ ) soon. Martin became lazier and lazier. He just sat back and watched Jack carefully.

Finally, ( ㉚ ) ( as / as / at / became / good / Jack / jewelry / making / Martin ). The shop's name was known far and wide, and more and more people came to the shop. Martin couldn't stop laughing because he had a hard worker who asked for just the dust. "The boy has nothing. He will have to work for me forever," he thought.

But one day Jack said, "Sir, I'll leave."

"Leave?" Martin cried. "( ㉛ ) can you leave?" You have nothing!"

"That is not quite true, sir," said Jack. "And I thank you for all you have done for me." Then he walked out.

With the gold dust he saved, Jack had enough money to start his own ( ㉜ ). Soon after that, Belle disappeared from Martin's Fine Jewelry. The next day she sat in the window of Jack's Fine Jewelry. In the workroom, Jack was making his jewelry.

語句

shine 輝く broom ほうき sir 目上の男性への呼びかけ語 wage 賃金 curl 丸く曲がる  
mice mouse の複数形 workroom 仕事場 sweep 掃く hid 隠した candle ろうそく  
half-burned 半分燃えた match マッチ struck ずった brush なでる dust ちり

(1) 下線部①に語句を加えて意味を明確にするとき、次の文の \_\_\_\_\_ に適当な語句を書き入れなさい。

..... no name.

(2) 下線部②の理由を、句読点を含めて50字以内の日本語で答えなさい。


(3) 次の2つの文①、②を[ ]に入れるとき、最も適当な場所をそれぞれア～キから選び、記号で答えなさい。  ① [ ]  ② [ ]

- ① He felt that she was smiling at him.
- ② When Jack burned the candle, it gave light to the dark room.

(4) ( ③ )に入る最も適当な語を次から1つ選び、記号で答えなさい。 [ ]  
ア angry イ sad ウ serious エ surprised

(5) ( ④ )-( ⑤ )に入る語句の組み合わせとして最も適当なものを次から1つ選び、記号で答えなさい。 [ ]  
ア ④ Jack ⑤ his master イ ④ Martin ⑤ his master  
ウ ④ His master ⑤ Jack エ ④ His master ⑤ Martin

(6) 下線部⑥の( )内の語句を意味の通るように並べかえなさい。  
.....

(7) ( ⑦ )に入る最も適当な語を次から1つ選び、記号で答えなさい。 [ ]  
ア Who イ When ウ Where エ How

(8) ( ⑧ )に入る最も適当な語を本文から抜き出して答えなさい。 .....

(9) ( a )～( d )に入る最も適当な語を次からそれぞれ1つずつ選び、必要があれば適切な形に直して答えなさい。

- make set show stay work worry

a .....  b .....  c .....  d .....

It was my twelfth birthday, and the thing that I really wanted most was a new bicycle. A blue-low-rider with fat tires. But I knew that my family couldn't buy one. My parents said that I should be happy that I had a bicycle at all — ① if you can call that old thing that I own a bike.

② A new bike was just a dream, so I settled for a night table. I thought that I would have a safe place to keep my own things away from my noisy younger brothers. So, I asked my parents for a night table with \*lockable drawers. And that's the thing I got.

We went to the secondhand \*furniture store and found an old dark brown night table. It didn't look too cool, but it had drawers that I could keep locked. I decided that I would paint it and put some stickers on it to make it better.

After we took it home, I was getting ready to paint it. When I pulled the drawers out, I felt something in the back of the lowest drawer. I reached in all the way to the back, and guess what I found? A plastic bag with some papers in it.

*Cool! Maybe I've found somebody's secret things,* I thought. When I opened the bag, I noticed that the papers were some kind of official-looking \*documents. And, wrapped in the papers were a lot of ten and twenty dollars bills! ③ Talk about finding a treasure! And on my birthday!

"Is this some kind of joke?" I said aloud. Maybe my family was playing a trick on me. Maybe this was not true money. But it looked pretty real. Somebody put money in this bag and hid it in the back of the locked drawer. I read the papers. I found that some old lady was leaving her money for her son and grandchildren.

All this was too strange. My mind was going crazy. *Was I the luckiest twelve-year-old ever? With this money I could buy the coolest bicycle. I could even buy bicycles for my brothers. Who knows? Maybe I even had enough here to get a car for my parents.*

"Finders keepers, losers \*weepers," I started singing as I began counting the money. When I reached a thousand dollars, I had to stop. My mother was knocking on my bedroom door. I quickly closed the drawer with the money in it.

④ How is your painting job coming along, John? Do you want some help?"

"No... thanks, Mom, I haven't even started. I... I'll call you when it's ready."

"Is everything all right?" she asked.

*No, everything was not right.*

"I'm okay," I said. "I'll call you when it's ready."

When my mother left my room, I lay on my bed, and, looking at the ceiling, I started thinking about this past week. *First, I didn't make the basketball team. Then, I failed the math test. Finally, my little brother destroyed my science project. (So I needed a night table with locked drawers.) And now, I found this money on my birthday the only good news in a long time. An answer to my problems. But I don't feel good about it. Why not?* 35

I would have to make up lies to tell my family and friends. "Finders keepers..." the saying goes. But that money wasn't really meant for me, was it? The lady saved it for her family. She died and nobody knew about the money hidden in the night table. Her family gave it to the secondhand store, and now it was in my hands. 40

"What should I do?" I said to myself. "How about keeping it and getting all kinds of things for me and my family? It isn't too bad for me to keep it, if I share it... right? Or what about keeping some and returning the rest? After all, nobody knows how much money is there... and it is my birthday! Or how about giving it all back? Tell the truth. No new bicycles. No car." 45

"⑤ Somebody, help me with this!" I said to myself. But I really didn't need someone else to give me the answer. I failed the math test though I had the chance to take a quick look at my neighbor's answers. That's because ⑥ I already knew right from wrong. ⑦ I decided not to fail this test. It was a test of \*honor. My honor. 50

I called my parents and my brothers into my bedroom and showed them the thing I found. ⑧ They were wide-eyed — speechless! When they asked, "What should we do about this?" I already had the answer.

"Let's take it back to the store and find her family," I said. 55

The store owners could not believe it when we told them the story.

"You mean to say you found over a thousand dollars and you are here to return it?" they asked, almost at the same time.

Looking through their records, they found the family's telephone number. They called them right there and then, and within a few minutes, they all came over to the store: her son, his wife and their three children — a family pretty much like ours. The parents had tears in their eyes. The old lady's twelve-year-old grandson just kept looking at me as people were telling the story over. 60

You see, they were all still sad about her death. And the father lost his job. They asked for help, and at last I brought in the answer to their help. ⑨ My act of honesty not only helped them to pay the \*rent, but also gave them hope. 65



(4) 下線部⑦の後に英文を続ける場合、最も適当なものを次から1つ選び、記号で答えなさい。

[       ]

ア because I wanted the lady's family to return the favor to me

イ because I didn't want to hurt my pride

ウ because I didn't want to repeat the same mistake

エ because I wanted the lady's family to appreciate my kindness

(5) 下線部⑨が示している具体的な行為を次のように表すとき、\_\_\_\_\_に入る適当な語を1語ずつ答えなさい。

My act of honesty was to \_\_\_\_\_ the \_\_\_\_\_ to the \_\_\_\_\_.

(6) 下線部⑩の(       )内の語句を意味が通るように並べかえなさい。

-----

(7) 本文の内容に合うように次の質問に答えるとき、\_\_\_\_\_に適する語を答えなさい。

Question : Why did John think that he would have a safe place to keep his own things?

Answer : Because he thought \_\_\_\_\_ of his little \_\_\_\_\_ might  
\_\_\_\_\_ his \_\_\_\_\_ again.

(8) 二重下線部の慣用表現を次のように説明するとき、(       )に入る最も適当なものを次から1つ選び、記号で答えなさい。

[       ]

(       ) will say, "Finders keepers, losers weepers."

ア A person who finds something and doesn't want to waste it

イ A person who finds something and doesn't want to share it with others

ウ A person who finds something and doesn't want to cause trouble to others about it

エ A person who finds something and doesn't want to give it back

□(9) 本文の内容と合うものを次から3つ選び、記号で答えなさい。 [ ] [ ] [ ]

ア John wanted a bicycle for his birthday because he didn't have one.

イ John's parents encouraged him to give up the idea of riding a bicycle.

ウ John's parents didn't share the same opinion with him about his bicycle.

エ John's parents were not rich enough to buy him an expensive bike for his twelfth birthday.

オ Because the night table John got from his family had only one lockable drawer, he asked them for another again.

カ The second night table John got from his parents was so new that it had some drawers with no stickers on them.

キ At the secondhand furniture store John found an old night table made better by painting.

ク John had one unfortunate experience after another in the past week just before his twelfth birthday.

ケ John looked at another student's paper during the math test to achieve better marks.

コ John tried to be as honest as possible after listening to how the old lady's family suffered from hunger.

サ The old lady's family didn't express their feelings at all, so there was no way left for John to know how they really felt about the money.

シ Neither John's parents nor his brothers agreed with his idea of sharing the money he found equally among them.

# 不規則動詞活用表

原形	現在形(3単現)	過去形	過去分詞	現在分詞(~ing)	意味
be	am, is, are	was, were	been	being	~である, ~にいる
become	become(s)	became	become	becoming	~になる
begin	begin(s)	began	begun	beginning	~を始める
bend	bend(s)	bent	bent	bending	~を曲げる
blow	blow(s)	blew	blown	blowing	吹く
break	break(s)	broke	broken	breaking	~をこわす
bring	bring(s)	brought	brought	bringing	~を持ってくる
build	build(s)	built	built	building	~を建てる
buy	buy(s)	bought	bought	buying	~を買う
catch	catch(es)	caught	caught	catching	~をつかまえる
choose	choose(s)	chose	chosen	choosing	~を選ぶ
come	come(s)	came	come	coming	来る
cost	cost(s)	cost	cost	costing	[金額が] かかる
cut	cut(s)	cut	cut	cutting	~を切る
do	do(es)	did	done	doing	~をする
draw	draw(s)	drew	drawn	drawing	~を描く
drink	drink(s)	drank	drunk	drinking	~を飲む
drive	drive(s)	drove	driven	driving	運転する
eat	eat(s)	ate	eaten	eating	~を食べる
fall	fall(s)	fell	fallen	falling	落ちる
feel	feel(s)	felt	felt	feeling	~と感じる
fight	fight(s)	fought	fought	fighting	戦う, 争う
find	find(s)	found	found	finding	~を見つける
fly	fly[flies]	flew	flown	flying	飛ぶ
forget	forget(s)	forgot	forgot / forgotten	forgetting	~を忘れる
get	get(s)	got	got / gotten	getting	~を得る
give	give(s)	gave	given	giving	~を与える
go	go(es)	went	gone	going	行く
grow	grow(s)	grew	grown	growing	成長する
hang	hang(s)	hung	hung	hanging	~を掛ける
have	have[has]	had	had	having	~を持っている
hear	hear(s)	heard	heard	hearing	~を聞く
hide	hide(s)	hid	hidden	hiding	~を隠す
hit	hit(s)	hit	hit	hitting	~を打つ
hold	hold(s)	held	held	holding	~をつかむ
hurt	hurt(s)	hurt	hurt	hurting	痛む
keep	keep(s)	kept	kept	keeping	~のままにしておく
know	know(s)	knew	known	knowing	~を知っている
lay	lay(s)	laid	laid	laying	~を横にする
lead	lead(s)	led	led	leading	~を導く
learn	learn(s)	learned / learnt	learned / learnt	learning	~を学ぶ
leave	leave(s)	left	left	leaving	~を去る
lend	lend(s)	lent	lent	lending	~を貸す

原形	現在形(3単現)	過去形	過去分詞	現在分詞(～ing)	意味
let	let(s)	let	let	letting	～させる
lie	lie(s)	lay	lain	lying	横になる
lose	lose(s)	lost	lost	losing	～を失う
make	make(s)	made	made	making	～を作る
mean	mean(s)	meant	meant	meaning	～を意味する
meet	meet(s)	met	met	meeting	～に会う
mistake	mistake(s)	mistook	mistaken	mistaking	～を間違える
pay	pay(s)	paid	paid	paying	～を支払う
put	put(s)	put	put	putting	～を置く
quit	quit(s)	quit	quit	quitting	～をやめる
read	read(s)	read	read	reading	～を読む
ride	ride(s)	rode	ridden	riding	～に乗る
ring	ring(s)	rang	rung	ringing	鳴る
rise	rise(s)	rose	risen	rising	[太陽などが] 昇る
run	run(s)	ran	run	running	走る
say	say(s)	said	said	saying	言う
see	see(s)	saw	seen	seeing	～を見る
sell	sell(s)	sold	sold	selling	～を売る
send	send(s)	sent	sent	sending	～を送る
set	set(s)	set	set	setting	～を置く
shake	shake(s)	shook	shaken	shaking	～を振る
shoot	shoot(s)	shot	shot	shooting	～を撃つ
show	show(s)	showed	showed / shown	showing	～を示す
shut	shut(s)	shut	shut	shutting	～を閉める
sing	sing(s)	sang	sung	singing	～を歌う
sit	sit(s)	sat	sat	sitting	すわる
sleep	sleep(s)	slept	slept	sleeping	眠る
smell	smell(s)	smelled / smelt	smelled / smelt	smelling	～のにおいがする
speak	speak(s)	spoke	spoken	speaking	話す
spend	spend(s)	spent	spent	spending	～を過ごす
stand	stand(s)	stood	stood	standing	立つ
steal	steal(s)	stole	stolen	stealing	～を盗む
strike	strike(s)	struck	struck	striking	～を打つ
swim	swim(s)	swam	swum	swimming	泳ぐ
take	take(s)	took	taken	taking	～をとる
teach	teach(es)	taught	taught	teaching	～を教える
tell	tell(s)	told	told	telling	～を話す
think	think(s)	thought	thought	thinking	～と思う
throw	throw(s)	threw	thrown	throwing	～を投げる
understand	understand(s)	understood	understood	understanding	～を理解する
wake	wake(s)	woke	woken	waking	目を覚ます
wear	wear(s)	wore	worn	wearing	～を着ている
win	win(s)	won	won	winning	～に勝つ
write	write(s)	wrote	written	writing	～を書く





\* 0 5 0 2 4 - 1

# ご検討用見本



## 育伸社



〒110-0016

東京都台東区台東3-46-9

☎03(3831)9591代

札幌	☎011(210)0801代	千葉	☎047(435)0560代	京都	☎075(353)6506代
仙台	☎022(773)8081代	西東京	☎042(527)0822代	大阪	☎06(4800)2133代
茨城	☎029(838)1364代	横浜	☎045(473)1811代	神戸	☎078(371)7180代
熊谷	☎048(599)1660代	浜松	☎053(450)7227代	広島	☎082(568)0301代
埼玉	☎048(651)6741代	甲信	☎0263(36)5528代	松山	☎089(946)5505代
新潟	☎025(290)6262代	名古屋	☎052(979)5616代	福岡	☎092(472)9815代
東京	☎03(5298)1341代	金沢	☎076(261)4811代	鹿児島	☎099(239)8225代

学校営業部 ☎03(5807)3826



弊社の教材は一般書店の店頭では販売いたしておりません。

ABA

以下の行為等を禁じております。違反をすると著作権法その他の法令により罰せられます。

・無断複製 ・販売契約を伴わない無断版(転)売 ・インターネットオークションへの出品

# Sirius 21

シリウス

## 英語 Vol.3

発展編

クラス 氏名

